

Rosemary Ellen Guiley

The **Djinn**
Connection



The Hidden Links Between Djinn, Shadow People, ETs,
Nephilim, Archons, Reptilians and other Entities

Paranormal/UFO

Could a single entity be responsible for a multitude of our paranormal experiences throughout history?

Drawing upon her decades of extensive research in all facets of the paranormal, Rosemary Ellen Guiley makes a compelling case that our interactions with spirits, extraterrestrials, shadow figures, ancient aliens, demi-gods and human-creature hybrids all involve the mysterious Djinn.

The Djinn are little-known in the West beyond folk tales of genies in lamps and bottles, but they are real and active in our world. They are a race of powerful, masterful shape-shifters who exist in a dimension parallel to ours. Humans have had millennia of intense engagements with the Djinn, who disguise themselves in the forms of many different entities in order to keep themselves and their true motives hidden. Some of their motives are not in our best interests.

The Djinn are not the only beings interacting with humans, but their giant shadow falls across every part of our paranormal and entity contact experiences, including bedroom invasions, alien abductions, and genetics manipulators from other worlds.

The Djinn are significant force in the destiny of human beings. In *The Djinn Connection*, Guiley explains what we need to know – and how we should respond.

Rosemary Ellen Guiley has worked full-time in the paranormal and metaphysical fields since 1983, researching all kinds of entity contact experiences, both positive and negative. She has written more than 50 books, including single-volume encyclopedias, on a wide range of subjects, making her one of the most widely known and consulted experts in the field. Her websites are www.visionaryliving.com and www.djinnuniverse.com.



The Djinn Connection
*The Hidden Links Between Djinn,
Shadow People, ETS, Nephilim, Archons,
Reptilians and Other Entities*

Rosemary Ellen Guiley

Visionary Living, Inc.
New Milford, Connecticut
Copyright Visionary Living, II.,
2013

The Djinn Connection
By Rosemary Ellen Guiley Copyright
Visionary Living, Inc., 2013

All rights reserved. No part of this book may be reproduced without permission.

Cover design by Raul da Silva

Visionary Living, Inc. New
Milford, Connecticut

www.visionaryliving.com

land in the Eastern part of the United States. Over the course of time, I, my team, and the occupants of the land experienced an amazing range of phenomena that made this place a Grand Central of the Strange. There were ghosts. Poltergeists. Phantom "things with too many legs. Mysterious creatures of no known earthly origin. Unidentified lights in the sky. Craft of unknown origin. Saw-toothed beings that stared out of windows. Flying black shadows and pillars of black that radiated intense malevolence. Flying multi-colored orbs and lights that shape-shifted as they zipped over the ground. And, underneath everything, a sinister intelligence that orchestrated a relentless campaign of psychological and physical terror that affected everyone involved.

It might appear that this area was a cornucopia of different entity and phenomena manifestations, a playground for supernatural beings of all kinds. Not so apparent to the untrained eye, however, was that a single source was responsible for them all. It did not take me long into the investigations to realize what we were up against: the Djinn, an ancient race of beings who are masterful shape-shifters, many of whom have a long-standing grudge against human beings.

This piece of terror-stricken land was yet another piece of a Djinn puzzle that kept growing with no end in sight. After years of research, I had already concluded that the Djinn were major players in hauntings, accounting for poltergeist activity, visitations and apparitions. Their footprints, however, went out in all directions. I soon linked them to Shadow People, a terrifying bedroom visitor. I found a remarkable similarity to fairies, demons and mysterious creatures. Then I followed a path of evidence to extraterrestrials, the ET abduction phenomenon, and our interactions with gods and beings throughout history.

The Djinn are players in many paranormal arenas.

"Djinn' comes from the Arabic verb *janna*, which means "to hide or conceal.". Thus, the Djinn are the Hidden Ones. The Djinn have been well-known in Middle Eastern lore for millennia, but we in the modern West, if we know much about them at all, think of them only as fantasy genies in bottles. So much the better for the Djinn. Our lack of awareness of them enables them to carry out various agendas related to human beings, all the while disappearing like chameleons into the background, literally hiding in plain

sight.

The Djinn are like us: beings with free will, capable of choosing their path. Some are good, some are bad, some are evil, and some are mixed, sometimes good and sometimes bad. Most of their agendas concerning humans that are evident to us are self-serving at the least, hostile at worst. Not all Djinn are malevolent, any more than human beings are all good or all bad. Like humans, the Djinn have their terrorists, and it is the hostile ones who strike out against people to haunt, harass, possess, abduct and cause problems. They do not have our best interests in mind. They may not account for everything mysterious and supernatural, but they masquerade, cloak and deceive so that in many cases, we do not realize what we are really encountering. That serves their purposes, too.

As my research on the Djinn unfolded, I found that I was by no means alone. Most investigators here in the West in the paranormal, cryptozoology and ufology may not know the Djinn. However, I did find corroboration of my observations among researchers in the United States and elsewhere around the globe, among them ufologist Ann Druffel, who researched the Tujunga Canyon abductions and many other cases; Gordon Creighton, the editor of *Flying Saucer Review*; Turkish ufologist Farah Yurdozu; Michael Hallowell, English paranormal investigator; Miles Johnston, founder of the former Ireland UFO Research Centre; cryptohunter John Rhodes, and others.

Back in 1983, the late Gordon Creighton stated in the *FSR*. "...study of all the great world religions -- and notably Islam -- would yield valuable clues as to the true nature of the so-called 'UFO Phenomenon' and would rapidly eliminate much of the fatuous 'Space-Age Mythology that has been spawned in such profusion over the last three decades." He went on to say the Djinn are "inveterate liars and deceivers, and delight in bamboozling and misleading mankind with all manner of nonsense. (See the average Spiritualist séance for examples of their activities, and also the usual communications' from UFO entities in close-encounter cases.),"²

Apparently few in ufology or the media took notice, for we have continued to see certain themes promoted, such as the "grays" who want to either save the planet or save their own species. While some researchers have ventured into connections between ETs and fairies, gods and other beings from mythologies and lore, they have consistently bypassed the Djinn.

Perhaps Westerners do not want to take seriously entities that seem "Middle Eastern" - despite the fact that all the entities who populate the planet with us are everywhere and known by a variety of names; they are not limited to "countries" or "regions" or "religions."

The main threads I will explore in this book have to do with two phenomena that affect millions of people all over the planet: Shadow People and ETs, two of many forms taken by the Djinn who have hostile intent toward humans. In addition, many of our entity contacts throughout history need to be reexamined. The Djinn are likely to account for archons, the Watchers or Sons of God, the Nephilim, the Anunnaki, and many reptilian, fairy and demon encounters.

My discussions in this book are based on the following:

1. *Negative entity contact experiences, including abductions, are real experiences.* These experiences take place in a variety of environments: haunted landscapes; sites associated with traditions and histories of paranormal activity; haunted homes and structures, and bedrooms in particular; and other locations indoors and outdoors. The experiences take place under a variety of conditions: association with a sighting of a craft, mystery light, or a mysterious creature; incurring the ill will of entities; haunting phenomena,

including shadow figures, apparitions, poltergeist activity, troubling dreams, and spirit infestations; spirit oppression and possession; lucid dreaming and dream-state-related experiences; and involvement in occult activities, such as spirit summoning. In the cases of ET abductions, some individuals are targeted for hybrid breeding programs.

2. *Entity encounters are not limited to negative experiences.* The focus of this book is on the negative experience, which I feel is in need of more education. Plenty of material has been written about benevolent contacts. I do not debate here whether the entities have good or bad intentions. I am focusing on beings who have hostile intentions.

3. *All of our negative entity contact experiences are interrelated.* To understand what is really going on and how human beings are being

manipulated by other life forms, we cannot afford to look only at narrow categories of experiences, such as "just" hauntings or "just" ET abductions. The hostile agendas are being carried out on different fronts.

Usage of "Djinn"

"Djinn" has various spellings, including Jinn. "Djinn" refers to the plural, and "Djinni" to the singular. For the sake of convenience, I will use "Djinn" for both singular and plural.

Djinn and human destiny

In the course of my 30-year career researching the paranormal, I have striven to be as open-minded as possible, not automatically discarding or discounting ideas because they seemed at first glance far-fetched. I am not given to conspiracies and I have never been an alarmist. I have had plenty of entity experiences, both positive and negative. I believe in getting out into the field as much as possible, and I do extensive reading and interviewing. In the process of discovery, I have sometimes had to revise my beliefs in the face of evidence.

The Djinn are real, and we need to know about them, and how they are affecting our world and our pursuit of our own destiny.

Chapter I

The Mysterious Djinn

LONG BEFORE HUMAN beings arrived on this planet, another race held dominion here: The Djinn. Our arrival resulted in their departure - or rather

their ousting – to another dimension, and therein lies the friction between us and them. That friction is the root cause of many of our present paranormal problems with hostile entities, including Shadow People, the most common negative bedroom invader; and kidnappers, who in earlier times were the fairies and today are the abducting extraterrestrials. The Djinn have come at us in many other ways throughout history as well.

Most Westerners know little, if anything about the Djinn. They are the genies in bottles and lamps in the *Arabian Nights* tales. Most of the rest of the world knows them well, however. The earliest accounts of the Djinn date back at least 4000 to 6000 years ago in ancient Arabia, Persia, Sumeria, Babyilonia and Assyria. In their earliest identities, they were primordial spirits created from bad winds, who commanded and rode the winds, bringing pestilence and disease. They lurked in the desert and wasted spaces, vampirizing the life force of unwary travelers.

Everyone in the ancient world knew the Djinn. The Islamic scholar and theologian ibn Taymiyyah (1263-1328) stated:

No one in any of the Muslim sects denies the existence of *jinn* or that Allah sent Muhammad to them. The vast majority of disbelievers, whether pagan Arabs or other Semites, Indians and other Hamites, most Canaanites and Greeks, and other descendants of Japeth (a son of Noah), confirm the existence of the fire. As for the Jews and Christians, they recognize that the jinn exist in much the same way that Muslims do, although there may be among them some individuals who deny the existence of the jinn. 1

All of our Biblical ancestors were thoroughly familiar with the Djinn, but they vanished in Christianity. What happened to them? They were merged into concepts of demons, with a twist. While most of the ancient world knew the demonic as a broad class of interfering spirits both good and bad, Christian theologians chose to narrowly define demons as fallen angels who are the all evil servants of Satan. This theology has hobbled many Christians from effectively dealing with negative entities. It suits the Djinn, however, who appreciate the advantage of operating among people who are unaware of them.

Djinn behavior has not changed much over the centuries. They are adept at adapting themselves to changes in human society, beliefs, lifestyles and technology. There are variations in beliefs about them from region to region, but overall their chief characteristics and attributes are consistent.

In the course of my research, I made the acquaintance of Mahmoud (he prefers to be known only by his first name), who lives in Morocco. He once studied to be a *sahir*, a magician or sorcerer, because he wanted to own Djinn. He abandoned the idea when he learned how great a price the *sahirin* pay when it comes to dealing with Djinn. "I assumed all sorts of things about the Djinn until I dealt with them face to face," said Mahmoud. "I speak from what I have experienced with real Djinn, and real *sahirin*." I have included some of his experiences and observations throughout the book.

Early Origins

The primordial wind spirits of ancient Arabia migrated throughout the cradle of civilization. In ancient Mesopotamia, the Djinn were absorbed into the demonologies and mythologies of Sumeria, Babylonia and Assyria, taking hybrid forms of humans and animals, and from there migrated into Hebrew demonology and then into Christian and Islamic lore. They are best known in Arabian and Islamic lore – but they are by no means limited to the Middle East or to the Muslim world. Djinn are everywhere, and they interact with people of all spiritual and religious orientations. It does not matter if you believe in them or not, they are active in the world and in the affairs of human beings, usually to our detriment.

According to one old tradition, the Djinn's original homeland is the Qaf, mythical high mountains made of emerald that ring the earth. Like other mythical places, such as Mt. Olympus and Shangri-La, the Qaf are extremely difficult for humans to find.

There are many legends about the origins of the Djinn, and variations within the stories. By some accounts, the Djinn came into being when the *Qarinah*, a female serpent, mated with Iblis, a central figure in the Qur'an, and spawned the Djinn. Lilith, Adam's first wife, is one of their offspring.

She and her demonic-like offspring attack child-rearing women, newborns, and sleeping men.

King Solomon

According to the Qur'an, the Bible, and ex-canonical texts, King Solomon, the son of David and the second king of Israel, who lived about 1000 years before Christ, was granted sweeping powers by God when he ascended the throne. He could communicate with and control all the animal life; control the winds; and control all spirits so that they would serve him. The Qur'an states that he controlled all spirits and evil Djinn (Qur'an, 38:36-38). Djinn are not mentioned by name in the Bible.

Solomon wielded this power with a magical ring that was made in heaven and given to him by the angels, in some accounts, by the archangel Michael or the archangel Gabriel. The ring had iron in it - a substance known since ancient times to quell spirits - and was inscribed with a seal.

Solomon built the Temple of Jerusalem and much of the city of Jerusalem. He enslaved the wicked Djinn to do the labor - an item omitted from the Old Testament, but included in the Qur'an and in the ex-canonical text *The Testament of Solomon*, written between the 1st and 3rd centuries by anonymous authors.. The Djinn grudgingly did the king's bidding for the remainder of his life. The magical knowledge that Solomon possessed was passed down through the ages, by some accounts through the patriarchs, and was absorbed into magical texts still in use today, handbooks of summoning called grimoires. Solomon's Seal, which has different versions in five-pointed and six-pointed stars and inscriptions, is considered one of the most potent of all magical symbols.

Solomon became enamored with Bilqis, the Queen of Sheba, who was rumored to be half-Djinn. Her father was reputed to be a human king by the name of Al-Hadhad and her mother was a Djinn, Marlis. As a half Djinn, Bilqis had the potential to overpower Solomon, a great concern to the king's advisers. There are different versions of how Solomon and his advisers dealt with this issue. Either Solomon or his advisers devised a test to find

out her true nature. Even when they appear in beautiful human form, Djinn are said to still have a physical flaw that exposes their true identity. Most common are hairy legs and hooved feet. When Bilqis was summoned to meet Solomon, the floor was covered with glass that looked like water (in one version, there were water and fish beneath the glass). Bilqis picked up her skirts as she approached the king, and he was able to see her feet and legs. In some accounts, her feet and legs were normal. In others, she had normal feet but hairy legs, and we are left to wonder whether she was a human with hairy legs, or was part Djinn.

In some versions of the story, Solomon had her clean the hair off her legs. In other versions, her Djinn powers enabled her to know of the test in advance, and she removed the hair herself. Solomon and Bilqis married and had a son, Rehoboam. Whether or not he was part Djinn is not known, but he had exceedingly long arms. In yet another version, Solomon did not marry Bilqis, but sent her back home, accompanied by a bevy of Djinn to serve her.

Djinn in Islam

The Djinn were absorbed into Islam, founded in the 7th century by the Prophet Muhammad. In the Qur'an, dictated to Muhammad, an entire surah, or chapter, *al-Jinn* (Qur'an, 72: 1-28), discusses them and their creation story. There are numerous other references to them in the Qur'an, as well as the hadiths, which are numerous of accounts of Muhammad and his conversations and activities, and pertaining to the traditions of his companions and successors, and also in the extensive commentaries written on the Qur'an over the centuries.

The Qur'an says that Djinn were created from the smokeless flame of fire" (Qur'an, 55:15). In the beginning, there were angels, created out of a pure spiritual light, and Djinn. The angels have no free will, but follow God's will, while Djinn have free will. Iblis, a leader of the Djinn, has access to heaven. When Allah creates Adam out of earth and water, he tells the angels to bow to him. The angels do so, but Iblis refuses, on the grounds that he is superior to Adam because he comes from fire and Adam from clay (Qur'an, 7:12). Angry, God casts Iblis out; he takes some followers with him. Iblis appeals to Allah,

asking for a chance to demonstrate the inferiority of man. God grants the Djinn until Judgment Day to make their case. Iblis (whose name means "he who is despaired") thus takes on a role similar to that of Satan in Christianity, a tormenter of humans. The Djinn are sent away. In modern terms, they enter a parallel dimension. They are still part of Earth, but no longer in this reality.

According to a legend, the first of the Djinn was created by Allah from a hot desert wind, and he and his kind were given dominion over the entire planet. The Djinn ruled for 25,000 years. Eventually, their arrogance led to the breaking of Allah's rules, to which the original Djinn had agreed, and Allah sent angels to punish them. Many Djinn were killed and the remainder were scattered far and wide, and some established themselves on a remote island in the southern seas. Iblis, a powerful Djinn who stood

out, was taken to heaven and educated. But he, too, coveted power, and took over the island kingdom, assuming the name Azazel. He then had places in both earth and heaven. His final downfall came when Adam was created, and he refused to bow.²

The Qur'an is preached to Djinn and humans alike. Djinn as well as humans can choose their religion, or have no religion at all. There are Djinn of different religious beliefs, even Christian. The Djinn who followed Iblis are known as *shayatin* (singular, *shaytan*) and are evil. They are comparable to the demons of Christianity. More formidable than the *shayatin* - but not always evil - are the powerful and crafty *ifrit* and the even more powerful *marid*.

There are other types of Djinn as well, some of them on a much lower level, such as the corpse-eating, horrible-looking *ghul* of cemeteries, and those that are in human-beast form such as the *hinn*, who look like black dogs and are the lowest form.

Although Djinn can be religious and pious, most descriptions of them, including in the hadiths and the commentaries, say they are tricky and untrustworthy. Folklore that has developed over the centuries contains numerous prescriptions for avoiding problems with the Djinn, who are easily angered and vengeful. Like humans, Djinn have a full range of emotions, but they are especially prone to envy, and many of them envy humans. Some of them become attracted to humans and even fall in love with them. Stories of human-Djinn hybrid offspring date to antiquity.

Many of the Djinn want the Earth back, and have carried on a campaign for centuries to regain their territory.

Discoveries of travelers

In the 19th and early 20th centuries, travelers to the Middle East encountered stories about the Djinn and recorded them in diaries and books. One text of note is *Travels in Arabia Deserta* written by Charles M. Doughty, a geologist who spent two years traveling among the Bedouin nomads. This extensive work became a bible to T.E. Lawrence, the author of *Lawrence of Arabia*, who studied it for at least 10 years and drew a great deal of inspiration from it for his own epic novel.

Doughty described blood sacrifices to appease the Djinn, or *jan*, called "ground demons" or "earth-folk." The Bedouins told him the jan lived in cities in seven stages below the surface of the Earth. The blood, usually from a goat or other animal, was sprinkled on the ground and on stones as a peace offering, to ensure that no ill will would be directed against humans. Blood also was offered before any new construction began, so that workmen would not be endangered by "evil accidents."}

Blood sacrifices were commonplace in ancient times, offered to gods and spirits, and the practice still goes on in parts of the world. According to Mahmoud, the Djinn still appreciate blood, and human blood is the best. A blood sacrifice to them might take the form of a fatal accident that they help to engineer.

Djinn in Western lore

The Djinn made their main entrance to Western culture in two ways: via entertainment and via magic.

Entertainment

The ancient and exotic folk tales from *Arabian Nights* are the source of what most people know about Djinn, or rather, genies. The central story of the

Arabian Nights, properly known as *The Book of 1001 Nights*, is a drama between the Persian King Shahryar and his young bride, Scheherazade. The king has become disillusioned by unfaithful wives, and falls into a nasty habit of marrying women only to execute them the following morning, before they can dishonor him with infidelity. Finally he runs out of marriageable virgins. Scheherazade, the daughter of the king's vizier, offers to become his next bride. On their wedding night she launches into story-telling, telling one tale after another, and thus forcing him to postpone her execution. Her story-telling goes on for 1001 nights. By the time she is done, Shahryar has fathered three sons with her and is in love with her.

Translations of these tales captured Western interest. The first French translation was made in 1704 and the first English translation was made in 1706. French translations rendered "Djinn" as "genie," a reference to the Roman genius, or spirit of place.

In the 19th century, British explorer Sir Richard Burton spent a great deal of time in the Middle East, and rendered what is still considered to be the best and most authoritative English translation of *Arabian Nights*. He criticized the French corruption of "genie" and used "jinn."

Arabian Nights became popular as a children's book, and was relegated to the status of fanciful fairy tales.

The best-known story in *Arabian Nights* is the tale of Aladdin and his magical lamp. The lamp contains a powerful genie. The genie grants Aladdin's every wish, bestowing riches, prestige, and a royal bride - a genie story with a happy ending

Other folk tales about wish-granting genies have bittersweet endings. The usual theme is that a genie who is released from its bottle or lamp prison must grant three wishes before it can be liberated to return to its own kind. The first wish usually goes well, the second wish not so well, and the third wish is used to undo the first two. These tales give rise to the admonition, "Be careful what you wish for." The crafty Djinn will be literal in executing wishes, twisting them against the humans in unexpected ways.

The media, especially film and television, have rarely broken away from the *Arabian Nights* concept of Djinn. Numerous portrayals of wish-granting genies feature them as silly, quirky and tricky, and not to be taken seriously. Even the Three Stooges took on a genie, with their usual

slapstick. *I Dream of Jeannie*, a comedy TV series starring Larry Hagman and Barbara Eden that aired from 1965-1970, featured a voluptuous dream-girl genie in a bottle who becomes the silly but sly servant and companion of an astronaut who finds her bottle on a beach.

One Western film stands out as a more accurate portrayal of the Djinn: *Wishmaster*, executive produced by Wes Craven and released in 1997. Robert Kurtzman directed, and the script was written by Peter Atkins. A powerful Djinn master is imprisoned in a jewel that is imported in a shipment of antiquities to America. The heroine, who works at an auction house, unknowingly awakens the Djinn, who is released in an explosion. To regain his power, the Djinn must empower his jewel with people's souls, but first he must grant the heroine three wishes. His plan is to return to his own land through an interdimensional portal, and come back into the human world with an army of conquering Djinn. In shape-shifted forms, the Djinn searches for the heroine, offering people wishes in exchange for their souls.

Genre fantasy and paranormal fiction also portray Djinn in a more accurate way. But mainstream concepts of Djinn are still heavily influenced by the goofy genie in the bottle..

Magic

The Solomonic magic lore, which specifically concerned summoning and subjugating the Djinn, spread into syncretistic magical lore that incorporated elements of alchemy, Hermeticism, Kabbalism, Christianity and folklore. Most of the Western grimoires were written from the 17th century on, but some were written earlier. The authors were anonymous, but the texts were attributed to known or sometimes fictitious historical characters to lend the texts authority. *The Greater Key of Solomon* does have roots to antiquity, around the 1st century.

The texts offer instructions for spirit summoning the spirits are usually called spirits, angels or demons in most English translations.

Grimoires are not well known in the general population. One becomes acquainted with them by studying occultism and magic.

Characteristics and traits

Djinn forms

The smokeless fire origins of Djinn may be a form of plasma, which could account for their unusual shapes, abilities and properties. Plasma, which contains charged particles, reacts to electromagnetic forces. Changes in the density of plasma might account for the fluidity of Djinn forms, and the ease with which Djinn can shape-shift. The Djinn seem to be sensitive to electromagnetic energy generated by devices and equipment, as evident in testimonies of encounters.

Djinn are usually invisible to us, though they can see us. Some animals can see them. They have no known form - it is said that no human has ever seen the true Djinn form - and they can shape-shift into any form they please. Their favored forms are snakes, black dogs, black cats, spiders, jack als, goats, toads, and in the Middle East) camels, among other animals. They may have glowing red eyes or snake eyes. They do not assume the form of wolves, the only animal they fear, according to lore. A commonly seen form is a small goblin-like creature with a bald head and long ears; descriptions like this appear in the modern ET literature.

In *Tales of Arabia Deserta*, Doughty describes the *ghrul (ghul)*, a female monster of the desert :

...a cyclops' eye set in the midst of her human-like head, long beak of jaws, in the ends of one or two great sharp tushes, long neck; her arms like chickens' fledgling wings, the fingers of her hands not divided; the body big as a camel's but in shape as the ostrich; the sex is only feminine, she has a foot as the ass' hoof, and a foot as the ostrich. She entices passengers, calling to them over the waste by their names, so that they think it is their own mother's or their sister's voice. 4

A similar Djinn, called the *sal/ewwa*, is like a woman, only she has hoof-feet as the ass," Doughty said.

Djinn can assume convincing human forms from ugly to beautiful, the latter especially when they wish to seduce humans. In terrifying forms, they have multiple limbs and horns. A young *sahir* told Mahmoud, "If you ever saw them the way I see them, you would be so terrified you wouldn't even want to be close to them."

During his tenure with an older *sahir*, Mahmoud witnessed a Djinn manifestation: "I saw a flash and heat was produced for a brief moment, and before me was a snake that was stunned. After poking it and showing it to me, it disappeared before my eyes."

Since ancient times Djinn have been described in monstrous forms and as human-animal hybrids, sometimes quite distorted; these forms are likely to account for many of our sightings of mysterious creatures.

There is a strong electromagnetic element in whatever form they assume. They are often surrounded by blue or yellow-white glows. One of the patterns that emerged from my research is disruption of their presence when lights are turned on or kept on, as well as televisions, radios and computers.

Djinn abilities

The Djinn possess supernatural abilities. They are invisible most of the time, but can appear and disappear at will in a variety of guises. To someone unfamiliar with the Djinn, it might seem like many different kinds of entities are present, when in fact it is just one. This is key to understanding what is really going on below the surface in many haunting, possession and abduction cases that we deal with today.

The Djinn can transport themselves through the air and through inter dimensional doorways, going instantly from one place to another. They are capable of entering human and animal bodies and causing possession. They can exert an influence on thoughts and emotions, and they can invade dreams, causing nightmares.

The Djinn can materialize and dematerialize at will, and move through solid matter in our reality. Mahmoud once saw a *sahir* summon Djinn from their reality into ours in a dramatic way. "The whole ceiling was literally vibrating before they arrived from wherever they were," he said. "It vibrated for a good 20 seconds (and) I actually thought it would collapse. They definitely

came through something, which produced a lot of energy."

The meeting was not productive for the Djinn, for Mahmoud did not wish to agree to their terms. "They didn't want to be kept unnecessarily, so when we reached a stalemate, they told the *sahir*, 'Instead of us wasting time here, let us return. Come back and let us know when you have made your decision. They then levitated and left. After wishing us a good day, next thing I heard was them on the other side of the ceiling, leaving at tremendous speed in the opposite direction. They passed through the ceiling with ease."

The Djinn have powers we attribute to psychic ability, and they can affect physical matter in our world, making objects move, appear and disappear, and causing things to happen, such as the malfunctioning of equipment and devices, accidents, and so on.

Djinn society

Djinn are mortal; they live and die, but their life spans are much longer than humans' lives, stretching to thousands of years. They eat, drink, marry and have families, and live in organized societies under kingships. In some traditions, Djinn are classified by colors. Red and black Djinn are the most powerful, followed by blue Djinn; green are young and immature.

Djinn have their own sets of morals, ethics and laws, and enforcement and judicial systems. There are rules against interfering in the lives and destinies of humans, but some do it anyway, and the evil ones have free will to roam the planet.

They prefer isolated places, and in the Middle East live in deserts and abandoned places. In ancient lore, many of them are fond of the depths of the sea. In America, I have found them adapted to all kinds of dwelling places, even cities, but many still appreciate more untouched locales in wooded and hilly or mountainous terrain, as well as desert areas.

The Djinn are quite territorial and do not appreciate humans trespassing on their property. They can take up residence in houses and buildings, as well as areas of the landscape. In homes and buildings, they create hauntings (blamed on ghosts) to scare people away. If

humans move into a remote area occupied by Djinn, they can initiate a campaign of terror against them to get them to leave.

Some of them take up residence in the homes of people, where, invisible, they eat, sleep and live alongside humans.

Djinn language

The Djinn have their own language, perhaps ancient Syriac, a dialect of Aramaic, according to one tradition. People who hear them speaking often describe it as sounding like a mix of ancient tongues. When dealing with humans, they can speak any language, but often impress their thoughts and intentions telepathically rather than verbally. Sometimes their voices sound like an ordinary human, though they give themselves away with intermittent groans and growls. Sometimes their voices are horrible and unpleasant. They also make singing, buzzing, humming, ringing, and clicking sounds, which are reported in some Shadow People and ET encounters as well.

In ancient lore, the sounds made by the great expanses of sand in certain places in the desert - ringing, buzzing, humming and moaning - were attributed to the Djinn speaking to each other or alerting humans of their presence. The noises have been attributed to the natural motion of wind over the sand; however, in 2004 a team of scientists who studied the noises in the Sahara Desert in southeast Morocco could not explain the entire phenomenon.

Sexual interest in humans

As mentioned above, accounts of Djinn-human sexual relations and marriages have been acknowledged for centuries. Such liaisons are frowned upon in most Muslim quarters. Still, these relationships go on. When it comes to romantic attachments, the Djinn are often jealous, and will lash out if they are not given the proper attention, or if the person acquires a human love interest. They will go to great lengths to disrupt or destroy the relationship with a human rival.

More about the sexual side of Djinn relationships will be discussed in

the chapter on Djinn lovers. The hybrid human-Djinn offspring will be discussed in connection with ancient hybrids such as the Nephilim, and to the hybrid breeding program carried out by the ETs. According to ancient lore, the hybrid offspring are carried off by the Djinn to live in their land, and they have limited ability to be in ours.

But what if the objective of a hybrid breeding program is to create a hybrid that would be able to live fully among humans? The Djinn would be able to occupy our side of the interdimensional barrier more frequently and for longer times – perhaps permanently.

Djinn and sorcery

Since ancient times, Djinn have been sought for magical purposes. They are powerful beings who can take spirit form. Spells and conjurations exist for summoning them and also binding them to a person for service. They can be bound to vessels, rings and other jewelry, and objects; hence the "genie in the bottle." Magic and making deals with Djinn may seem to have little connection to the abduction phenomenon, but there is a connection that cannot be overlooked.

Magical practices are *shirk* in Islam (the sin of idolatry or polytheism), but they go on, anyway. Selling Djinn and magical secrets, and making deals with Djinn on behalf of others, are a thriving business with no shortage of customers who want money, power and fame in a hurry. The odds are high for receiving useless spells and empty objects. In cases where one might actually acquire Djinn, the odds are even higher that the Djinn will turn the tables and get the upper hand. Dealing with them is the equivalent of becoming ensnared in a sticky spider's web - the more you struggle to break free, the more entrapped you become.

In Northern Africa, Djinn are not often bound to jewelry, an unnecessary expense. A true binder of Djinn, said Mahmoud, can bind one to any object, even a tin box. Rather, the *sahirin* usually use and sell jewelry empowered by Djinn.

The *sahirin* deal with ancient Djinn and in groups, for each Djinn has a specialty: Said Mahmoud:

Each has their ability the same way every human has talents. One could be good with influencing people, another could be good with wealth, another could be good with protection against other Djinn and curses, another could be good with hurting or killing people, and so on. That is why there are Djinn you buy for wealth and there are Djinn you buy for protection.

No matter what the sellers promise, it is rare to ever actually deal with a single, all-powerful Djinn. "Even if you did, it would never allow itself to be bound," said Mahmoud.:

Service is never free and a pact with the Djinn requires payment in return. Often this is in the form of one's life force or blood sacrifice, some times involving humans through accidents and violent death. The Djinn may not call in their markers for years, even most of a person's lifetime, leading some people to think that they have a sweet deal going. Said Mahmoud:

It is a known fact that the Djinn will wipe out entire families when the deal or pact is broken. This is not a one-off occurrence but a trend with them — you hear the same thing everywhere you go in various parts of Africa. I was even warned by a *salir* himself some years back, when I wanted to buy Djinn, You obey them and if you fail to carry out your duty even for one day they can claim the life of anyone in your family they choose or punish you severely.

Usually the evil Djinn or rebellious (ones) will kill everything in the vicinity of where they are kept. In some cases you could travel to another continent and the Djinn would still follow you there and continue terrorizing you and your family. I have met people who this happened to. The reason for it is, you made a pact or deal and did not fulfill your terms. You are bound to the Djinn and it now can do whatever it wants with you. No amount of pleading will get you out.

Even the "believer" Djinn who are religious and have converted to the Muslim faith will cause problems if they are angered, Mahmoud said.

Almost every day, I receive email from one or more persons asking how to acquire Djinn. The letter writers are under the illusion that they are smarter than Djinn and nothing bad will happen to them, and that ownership is a one-way street of power and goodies. It is a one-way street, but going in the opposite direction. "They clearly have the advantage when dealing with humans," said Mahmoud. Their supernatural abilities and invisibility always give them the upper hand and they know it." In addition he said:

If you ask anyone in North Africa (and) generally in Africa, where they are aware of the Djinn, including small Christian communities - if you just mention the word "Djinn," they will tell you it is synonymous with death and to keep away. People I have met who are poor and struggling would even say that they would rather die poor than buy a Djinn. Even they are aware of the poison chalice that an evil or rebellious Djinn hands you.

I do not recommend seeking out the Djinn. Many stories of Djinn dealings gone bad are posted on my website www.djinnuniverse.com. Some postings defend the Djinn and describe benevolent relationships, but for the most part, people who engage the Djinn usually regret it.

We do not have to actively seek out the Djinn to have run-ins with them, however. We encounter them when we move into their territory without knowing it. We encounter them when we somehow cross their radar of interest, and they decide we can be useful to them, and so they visit us, watch us, vampirize us, and abduct us.

The reasons why Djinn harass people and abduct them, using different disguises, are many. One is reclamation of their original homeland. One possibility is a backlash against humans who do not make good on deals. Grudges and Djinn curses can follow humans and their lineages for centuries.

"Absolutely, there are Djinn who not only want humans to suffer, but to ultimately wipe them out," said Mahmoud.

As my own research progressed from unresolved hauntings to Shadow People bedroom invasions to abducting ETs, that is exactly the picture that emerged.

Djinn and Shadow People

AWOKE ONE NIGHT to the sight of a large, looming figure, which took up the entire doorway. It wasn't moving, but it wasn't completely still, either. I couldn't see any features... but I could tell it was male... he appeared to be seven feet tall. It was a dark shadow, surrounded by a glowing white/yellow light all the way around the perimeter of his body. I was literally frozen in fear and when I opened my mouth to scream, no sound would come out. I could do nothing but stare. I watched wide-eyed as finally it shrunk smaller and smaller and then disappeared into a little pinhole of light. I was gripped in terror for a very long time before I was able to turn the lights on.

Of all documented encounters with unknown beings, Shadow People stand out for the sheer panic and terror they cause to their human victims, as described in the account above. These menacing black forms invade bedrooms where they stand and watch sleeping people, loom over them, crush them with suffocating weight, and sometimes physically attack them with vicious force. They come and go at will, unpredictably, materializing out of thin air, walking through walls, emerging from closets and sliding out from under beds. Many of them emanate such intense malevolence and evil that victims often assume they are demons. They have a strong connection to abducting aliens or ETS.

Shadow People are not demons, nor are they Ers, however. Shadow People are Djinn. Our encounters with them are more common than any other entity except perhaps ghosts. They have been watching us since antiquity. My interest in Shadow People began in 2004, when, in a short period of time, I received a large number of emails all detailing the same or similar experiences involving sinister figures that appeared in bedrooms in the middle of the night. They were described as pitch black

silhouettes of what appeared to be tall men in coats, often wearing hats. Sometimes they looked like monks in hooded robes, or like the Grim Reaper but without a scythe. Their blacker than black forms stood out against the darkness of the room, blocking out the backgrounds behind them. Their forms were featureless, with the exception in some cases of eyes: red, yellow, green, or blue, and always solid in color and glowing. In a few cases, pale faces were seen. They glided, moved instantly, and vanished into nothing or clouds of black smoke and mist. They rarely communicated, though some conveyed terrifying messages telepathically or in rasping, growling voices.

Most victims found themselves paralyzed in bed while the figures were present. The figures stood by the bed and seemed to stare with invisible but penetrating eyes. In some instances, the dark figures attacked the victims, who felt they were in real physical struggles with beings of overwhelming power - and in a fight for their very lives. Just as suddenly as the attacks started, they usually ended and the figures vanished. The victims, however, were left in states of psychological shock, and fear that the mystery beings would come back again without warning.

The Shadow People came in consistent variations. The tall ones, 6 to 8 feet in height, usually appeared solo or in pairs. Shorter ones, 3 to 5 feet high, came in groups of three or more. The short ones almost always had red eyes, and seemed more dangerous than the tall ones. Whatever their size, what were they - and what was their purpose in terrorizing people in their beds?

In 2005 I launched a project to collect Shadow People experiences, assemble them into a database, and look for patterns. People of both sexes and all ages have these encounters, and some of them are visited by Shadow People throughout their lives. I quickly discovered that there was no easy, simple explanation for Shadow People. Their shadows literally fell across the entire spectrum of paranormal phenomena. They haunted homes and landscapes, caused nightmares, caused poltergeist phenomena, invaded bodies for temporary possession, transformed into monsters, and shape-shifted into beautiful humans for sexual purposes. They attempted to drag people out of the beds and abduct them. Most exuded hostility, but a small minority seemed to their human experiencers to be protective in nature.

Some indicated that they had been attached to their victims since birth - and asserted that they were in complete control of that person's life.

While most exhibited an intense interest in humans, some were attached to pieces of land, many in areas I would define as "portals," or thin spots between dimensions, and wanted humans to stay away. In one of my cases, a woman moved to a new location, and began having "nightmares" in which a Shadow Person came into her bedroom and communicated, "Get out of my house!" It identified itself as "the Sentinel." I have studied, on a long-term basis, cases in which people move to a new location, only to find a hostile presence that torments them and resists banishment. All of them feature Shadow People as a dominant phenomenon.

I have collected hundreds of cases of various types of Shadow People experiences since 2005. I have found references to them throughout history-not as Shadow People, but as "phantom monks," devils, "dark figures, shadows, watchers and so on. I have analyzed Shadow People in comparison to other entity experiences. I stress, they are not demons or ghosts. There is only one fit: Djinn.

Dreams that are not dreams

In many cases the Shadow Person experiences seem to happen in a bad dream, although on some level, the victims know they are not really dreaming. Similarly, ET abductees "dream" their abductions. There are varying states and lengths of paralysis in bed in both types of visitations. From one experience:

I have a repeating experience where I wake up and see a dark form like a man at the foot of the bed. It looks like a man wearing a big hat, but I feel it isn't human-it seems evil. I can't see a face. I try to get up and can't - I am paralyzed. I try to scream and barely get a sound out. I can't tell if I'm awake or dreaming. If it is a dream, it is very real.

In most cases, these terrifying episodes end when the victim is able to turn on a light or hide beneath the covers. In the latter, when they look out again, the

entity frequently - but not always - is gone. The departure does not lessen the terror. The victim is left in a state of psychological distress, wondering what happened, why it happened - and if and when it might happen again. There is no closure. In some cases, the entity is soon back again. In other cases, a long time passes before it returns. In yet other cases, years go by - but the victim always feels as though "It" knows where to come, wherever the person might be. There are no boundaries that afford protection. At some point, victims realize that the "dreams" are not dreams, but real experiences that have a surrealistic atmosphere.

Here is an account from a man:

My experience happened at around 5 AM. I was only 20 minutes into my sleep when I started waking up from my dream which was n't a good one. When I woke up my eyes were a little blurry but I could still see. I saw this very dark shadow kneeling right next to me. As soon as I laid my eyes upon it the shadow put his hand on my blanket where my arm was and turned me on my side, all a rapid movement. I couldn't move, I couldn't say anything for about 10 seconds, until I said, "Lord, please help me" (I said that in my head), and as soon as I did the shadow faded.

The victim added these details:

The shadow was kneeling but looked like it would be five feet seven standing up. My emotional reaction: I was in fear and confusion. No communication.

It looked like it was observing me. The shadow was around two inches away. It was in my room. It was my first time I've seen a presence with my own eyes.

Many victims sense that Shadow People are extremely intelligent, more so than humans. They act with calculating deliberation. Said one male victim, "Whatever it is, it has great intelligence. I felt it could outwit me at any time. I felt like a mouse being played by a cat."

Different forms

The most common form taken by Shadow People is the coated or caped tall male humanoid. Female humanoids are rarely reported. If not in humanoid form, the Shadow Person is a pillar or blob of black that shape-shifts as it moves.

In the following testimony, a young man has repeated visits from a shape-shifting entity that seems to be the same being regardless of form. He also discovers his "dreams" are not dreams:

I am 29 and living in northwest England. The first time this happened I woke up flat on my back in the night and there was a black shadow just a few inches above my face, just to the right of my vision. It felt like it was a face although I could not make out any features. At first I thought I was dreaming, but it stayed there for about 10 seconds. I then panicked and started swinging my fists at it and after about 10 or 15 more seconds it just disappeared.

Then about two or three weeks later I woke up in the night again and looked to my left and there was a three-D black blob floating near the wall in the corner by the door. It was about one meter high and about half a meter wide. It seemed to have a tail or tentacles, but I can't be sure - it was very hard to make out. I then sat up in bed to get a closer look. Although it was very black, parts of it seemed to shimmer a purplish color. It then moved along the wall and got smaller and smaller until it was gone.

The third time I saw it was similar to the second time, except it was a bit smaller and it was completely black, and when I spotted it, it reacted by flicking its tail/tentacle almost as if it was annoyed I had seen it. I sat up in bed again and it moved and disappeared in the same way.

Although it looked slightly different every time I saw it, I'm positive it's the same thing because of where it was, the way it moved, and the way it disappeared.

Although I haven't seen anything like this before, I do remember having two very vivid dreams when I was aged about 10 where I had contact with a shadow thing which seemed very similar. In one of these dreams I even had a conversation with it.

I think this can take any shape it wants. The best way I can describe it is like a three-D blob of ink. Up until a month ago I thought I was dreaming. I did a search on the internet and found countless other stories very similar to mine.

Tentacles and tendrils are reported in many black "blob encounters. We shall hear more about such forms in relation to UFOs and attacks on the media in the chapter on "The Battle for Humanity."

Shadow forms that move of their own volition along walls are common in Shadow People experiences. Sometimes the shadows leave the walls and reform in the room, as in this case reported by a man:

I was taking a nap on the sofa and felt like I was just dozing off when it seemed I woke up. On the wall in front of me was a shadow shaped like a person. Suddenly it dawned on me that the shadow shouldn't be there – I was alone in the room. I was then fully awake and staring at it, wondering what was going on, thinking maybe there was an intruder behind me somehow throwing his shadow on the wall. As I was looking at it, the shadow began to move along the wall. Then suddenly it slid off the wall, almost like a blob of something oozing off a surface, and then I could see a shadowy form in the room standing at the foot of the sofa. It looked vaguely like a tall skinny man wearing a coat and hat. The hat was crooked at a strange angle. There were no facial features, but somehow I knew it was staring at me. I screamed and jumped up, and it vanished. I searched the apartment, but no one but me was there, and the door to the outside was locked.

Sometimes the blobs or humanoid shapes slide under beds, into closets, or other parts of a bedroom, leaving the victim feeling especially vulnerable. Here is an account from a woman:

I was lying in bed trying to fall asleep when I looked up at my ceiling and saw a black mass. It was stout and the size of a child, but it had long lanky arms and legs. It made this weird clicking noise that would not be humanly possible to make. It dragged itself across my ceiling and quickly and jerkily crawled behind my head board. I have not seen it since, but I am still uneasy about it. I felt very threatened and I still feel terrified when thinking about it. It has come to my attention a friend of mine had a similar creature in his home. Instead, he saw it crawling up the stairs and into his little sister's room.

Shadow People can move with lightning speed. The clicking sounds are associated with Djinn as a form of their communication, and also are reported in ET abduction cases, especially those involving reptilians and insectoids.

In the next case, a Shadow Person assaults a young man who is awake:

It was about 2 or 3 in the morning on a fall night, (and) I was sitting in my room on the computer in the dark. I had this feeling of some thing watching me intensely and this feeling of something very sinister and dreadful coming from the upper right hand corner of my room by a loft. I looked up and saw this hooded, cloaked figure there. It swooped down in an energetic way. I was literally paralyzed. I could not move or yell or shout. This thing seemed to have weight on me. I turned to my side, barely looked at the cross on the wall, and yelled, "God, Jesus!" This thing then disappeared and I regained movement of my body.

I then went into another room where a roommate was

and they heard me. I was so freaked out, I couldn't go back to sleep. It radiated intense energy even before I looked at it. I also noticed in the experience it let out a sound, but not a sound that you hear in your ears it was like in your head. It's hard to explain. I know it wasn't a ghost because nothing bad has ever happened in that house that anyone has experienced. I also found out other family members have had the experience. I know I'm not crazy either and saw what I saw. I've seen a strange orb in the sky once before with other people and that didn't scare me but this did.

In some cases, Shadow People are not humanoids, blobs or mists, but animal-like, usually resembling a dog or cat, or an unknown creature.

Physical assaults and wounds

In most cases, the Shadow People stand and watch, which is terrifying enough to most victims. In some cases, they attack, and their human victims feel they are in for a fight for their life, as in the following case:

It had the shape of a man and stood over six feet tall. There were no details of features. It was blacker than black without really having a true color. It was more like void of all color, with maybe a hint of a bright blue around the outline, similar to the color of an electric arc.

It started as a physical, and I believe a spiritual attack. The presence was trying to suffocate me. Whatever it was, it was well beyond my strength. The fight lasted probably only a few seconds, but seemed an eternity to me. I fought it off with both every ounce of strength I could muster, and prayer. It was one of the few times I was sincerely afraid for my life.

If victims engage in a physical struggle with Shadow People, they often find marks on their bodies in the morning: bruises, red marks, scratches, and cuts. These are also attributed to Djinn as a result of being beaten by Djinn during an abduction.

The physical evidence shocks the victims, and convinces them beyond doubt that they were not dreaming. ET abductees also sometimes awaken with physical evidence, usually "scoop marks," which are indentations where the ETs took flesh samples; burn marks; and bruises. Sometimes there is blood on their pillows, purportedly from the nasal insertion of implants for monitoring.

In this next case, a woman experiences a strange bruise related to an attacking Shadow Person:

We (my husband and me) moved into a new apartment in our complex two weeks ago. It was pretty easy going. I am easy going by nature. This is what happened. I was sleeping and suddenly I was in my bed. I remember looking at the doorway and a shadow-like figure with claws sped towards me. His figure was jagged — it did not look human. As he approached he motioned as if to claw me, and then I woke up. I looked around and saw our cat acting very strangely, staring at a closed door, which is something he has never done before. It was around 3 AM.

A couple days later I was sleeping and only remember hands around my throat. I sleep on my side, and it felt like someone was stepping on the side of my neck. I remember moving my arms trying to stop whatever was happening. Then suddenly I woke up or it stopped. I am sure it was a dream but I felt pain. Around the same time a bruise appeared on the backside of my right calf about the size of a soda can bottom. I have never had a bruise like it before.

I have interviewed others who have had wounds related to the presence

of Shadow People. A male investigator, working at a famous haunted location, was approached by a large Shadow Person, which then went through his body with an icy cold sensation. He then experienced intense nervous energy. He felt something wet on top of his head. Reaching up to touch his scalp, his fingers came away bloody. He had two superficial, bleeding wounds on the top of his head. He could not account for how he got them, as he had not bumped his head against anything. The wounds healed in about two weeks.

A Pennsylvania woman who frequently saw a Shadow Person come from outside her house to inside told me that once she had her husband take photos of her when she sensed the entity's presence near her. Inexplicably, a thin bleeding cut opened on one wrist, as though she had been cut with a razor blade.

So-called reality television shows about paranormal investigations make it seem as though every trip to a haunted location is fraught with danger, and investigators are always getting slapped around by angry spirits. That's

far from the case - in fact, it's exactly the opposite of what goes on during most ghost investigations. In 30 years of work, I have only been inexplicably wounded twice - and both cases are associated with the presence of Shadow People.

In one instance, a small cut similar to a razor blade slice appeared on one forearm while I was sitting in the middle of a room conducting an Electronic Voice Phenomenon session, and a Shadow Person materialized. The cut was superficial and bled a small amount. In the second instance, I delivered a lecture on Shadow People and Djinn to a paranormal investigation group one evening. During the investigation that followed, Shadow People manifested in the environment and in photographs. The next morning, I awakened to find a large swath of long, cross-hatched scratch marks clear across the middle of my back, as though someone had taken a garden trowel to me. I attempted to duplicate them, but could not leverage my hands in any fashion to do so. They cleared up in about a day.

Evidently, the Shadow People/Djinn did not like what I had to say.

Attempted abductions

Some Shadow People attempt abductions. In accounts sent to me, the victims were able to fight them off, but sometimes were left with marks and wounds on their bodies where the Shadow People took hold of them. Similarly, ET abductees are taken; some who have repeated abductions learn how to fend them off.

In the following case, a woman was assaulted by what she called a "dark spiritual energy":

I am not a very religious person, but I do consider myself a very spiritual person... Here is what happened:

I had been through a major surgery and was in a lot of pain. In order not to keep my husband up all night with moaning and groaning, I had been sleeping in a spare bedroom. Every night I pray the rosary before I go to sleep, and I had done so that night. It isn't unusual for me to fall asleep before I finish and wake with it still in my hand or even in the bed somewhere. It was also not unusual for my husband to come in and check on me before he went to bed, taking the rosary out of my sleeping hand many times, kissing me on the forehead and tucking me in.

I had fallen asleep with my rosary in my right hand, with my right arm hanging off the edge of the bed. I was roused by the feeling of someone trying to take the rosary out of my hand and before I opened my eyes, I just KNEW it was my husband.

Imagine my terror when I rolled my head to the right, opened my eyes and instead of seeing my husband standing over me, I saw a very tall (probably seven feet) TOTALLY black figure with my hand in his...trying to take my rosary from my hand while grasping my wrist with the other hand. I could see no facial features at all and it seemed to be dressed in a cloak-like jet black garment with a hood that shadowed his face completely. As I tried to pull my hand away, I was in total shock and fear. You know that part of your brain that Says "This is just a

dream" and then you wake up? Well, my brain was screaming "I HOPE this is a dream....WAKE UP WAKE UP, WAKE UP!!!! But I realized I was completely awake and terrorized.

I tried to pull my hand away, but he held tight and in the most AWFUL raspy, dry, deep HOT breathy voice said "No, come with me." I clenched my rosary and started to fight but because I was in so much pain and couldn't move well, it was very difficult to struggle.

"Come with ME," he hissed over and over. "NO!" I tried to cry out, but my throat was dry and I could hardly make a sound at all. I remember starting to feel as if he was pulling me off the bed, when I had the thought to say, "Let me go in the name of JESUS CHRIST. my Lord, and King of Kings." He hissed an awful growling sound and said, "No, COME WITH ME." I kept repeating "In the name of Jesus, leave me alone....in the name of Jesus, in the name of Jesus." over and over.

Finally, the creature growled and hissed a very exasperated sound, threw my hand down (still clenching the rosary tightly) and said through clenched teeth, "It is obvious you have friends in very high places" and just dissipated. I laid there breathing so hard, crying and absolutely shaken to the core of my being, saying "Thank you, Jesus" over and over. I felt that if it had won, my body might have been still lying there but my soul or spirit or life energy would

have been gone and my physical body would have been left behind dead. I was so frightened I could not even call for my husband. I just lay there, shaking and praying till I fell asleep.

I woke the next day, thinking, "Wow, that was the most vivid dream I have ever had!" until I noticed I still had my rosary clenched in my fist and [there were) red marks on my wrist! I have never told anyone about this because I was sure I

would be sent to the nut farm, but I am SO relieved to finally find someone else who believes and understands what I went through.

The victim summoned religious help to ward off the attack. This remedy works in some cases but not in others. ET abductees have also had success with religious remedies as well.

In this Shadow Person attack, the victim felt that she might have been killed and her soul, spirit or life force stolen away. The vampirizing nature of Shadow People is a common thread in experiences. Djinn prey upon people for their life force.

Here is a case of a Shadow Person attempting to take away a victim, a young female child who becomes a lifelong experiencer:

I have had problems with these entities for as long as I can remember. My first memory I can recall (because it absolutely terrified me) occurred at the age of three. I was alone in my room getting ready for bed, still totally awake and operating, putting on my PJ's, and I felt like someone was watching me from my closet area. I looked in that direction only to see a hand, totally black, like a shadow but physical, motioning me to come in its direction. I was frozen in fear as I observed, staring in awe as it curled its finger as if to say, "Come here."

After that, they appeared in the corner of my rooms, in the doorways, etc. At age eight they started to appear in dreams. These dreams weren't really dreams, though, because it was as if I were wide awake watching my own body sleep. The Shadows would physically pick me up, drag me from my bed and even block my exits in dreams. I was so aware that even in my dream I would pray, "God, wake me up," or scream "Jehovah!" Then instantaneously I woke up.

I suffer even now till this day, the last event being a

month or so ago when I was sitting in my living room (I now have two kids who see them, too). I had that feeling of being watched again. I looked up and there it was at my window on the outside, looking at me, just glaring. When I made eye contact, so to speak because there weren't eyes, it vanished in a lightning bolt dart away.

I am petrified. I could never get anyone to guide me as to what this means or what they are, or if they are different figures or maybe the same one throughout the years. This phenomenon is happening to me, my mother earlier in her life, her sister, her sister's kids and now my own children. My aunt calls it "the family curse." I call it creepy.

I do in fact have psychic abilities but they fail when it comes to this department. I want to know why the shadow is following me and my family. Who is it? I took a photo of my two kids and there is a third child-like figure in the picture with its arm around my two kids. That in its self is scary.

Sometimes Shadow People plague and follow entire families through generations. The same pattern happens to many ET abductees.

In some cases, Shadow People seem drawn to people who are undergoing emotional trauma or depression; some victims say the entities want them to feel badly. Emotional upset and depression may make it easier for these beings to feed off human victims. In the next case, a young woman with recurring depression had had Shadow People follow her from home to home:

I have been seeing shadow people for years now. I see them almost every night in my home. A short one gives off a mischievous vibe. It likes to scare me mostly where I am sleeping. It has literally turned off lights, only the ones with a turn knob. Also tugs on my blanket by my feet and when I turn

to look, a short figure darts across my room along the wall. It appears to bend with corners. My dog growls and barks at it at times as well. Also, it likes to hide objects that I just set down and items disappear constantly around here.

It appears as a head or a whole small person about 4 ½ feet tall. When I see it my heart races and I get in a shocked frozen state..

Sometimes I get an overwhelming feeling to turn on a light. This creature loves to mess with me, pulling my hair, making knocking noises through the floor boards, pulling my covers. One night I woke up petrified and my covers were then suddenly pulled just off my feet. I was so scared that I stayed awake for the rest of the night with the lights on. It messes with my feet a lot.

My son wakes up terrified and points to a closet or doorway, He has been doing this since he was one and now is three and only can say, "Scary" and point. My father says he feels that they are not human and I do too.

We also have a tall shadow person and it lurks in corners, my front door way, or cross sections (entranceways) to my kitchen, hallway, etc. My dad has seen this one block out light (by) walking in front of it. We feel like we're being watched almost all the time. This one creeps me out and makes me very insecure. I've woken up to the suffocating feeling, bad smells, and terror. I feel this creature's goal is to make me miserable. It wants me depressed. It mainly shows up on my worst days. When I pretend to ignore it, its presence gets worse.

I moved out of the house for a year and they followed me to the new home.

The entity bends around corners. This is a common characteristic of Shadow People. Sometimes they act like they are peeking around corners at people. Some which are noticed by people retreat behind a doorway and then bend around, as though they are looking to see if the person is still

looking at them. ETs sometimes peek around corners of doors and halls - and glare through windows from the outside.

Other kinds of unusual bending are reported in Shadow People visits. When the entities hover or stand at bedside, they suddenly bend at impossible angles. In one case, the entity bent at a 90-degree angle to get within inches of the victim's face. The bending is sharp and angular. Their forms are fluid, however, and the angles can dissolve in an instant into a swirling cloud or a dissipating mist.

An ET link

In analyzing the reports from hundreds of Shadow Person experiencers, I found that many of them had volunteered that they were also ET experiencers. I expanded my research to include ET abductions and found an even stronger connection.

The two types of entity encounters do not always happen at the same time, but separately. Sometimes Shadow People precede abductions, by days, weeks, months, even years. A victim may be a Shadow Person experiencer from childhood, to have ET abductions start later in life.

"Jackie" was about three when she started seeing Shadow People in her home. They were small, and they watched her while she played. They were frightening. One night Jackie, by then age four, had a shocking experience:

My sister and I had our own rooms, but my parents had friends with small children over, and we were all playing in my room this particular night. In our romping about, a toy rolled under the bed. I picked up the dust ruffle to retrieve it, and my sense of reality was instantly flipped on its head. What I saw was not the carpeted underside of my bed, but a dimly lit "room" in which three of these figures were sitting looking up at me as I looked down at them. By "looking down" I mean that I had the

perspective on this as though I had lifted a ceiling tile and was looking down into a room from that vantage point.

Utterly freaked out, I ran down the hall to the living room to tell my parents. I knew someone had to see this. They, of course, put the whole thing down to a child's overactive imagination and sent me back to my room. Unable to not look, I peeked under the bed again, but there was nothing there this time except what you'd expect. I developed a fear of the dark, my closet, and under my bed after that, but I don't recall seeing them again.

The little Shadow People were soon replaced by abducting ETs. Jackie spent much of her adult life being abducted over and over again.

In the next case, a woman describes 24 years of night-time visitations, including ET experiences::

The first time was in Naples, Italy. We were there for two years, and it happened once. My husband said it sounded like I was being murdered. When I came to after the shock, I realized he was waving his hand in front of my face to get my attention. He said I was staring at something with my eyes as wide as could be. It was just a black figure of what I thought was a man next to my bed. It's happened since then I believe five or six times. I now live in Eng land.

For 24 years, I felt paralyzed in my bed so many times. There is something even more horrifying than the Shadow People, but no screaming involved. This is a force or energy that is so very powerful! When I was little it would drag me around the house, up and down the stairs, and throw me up against walls! As I've become older, the force brings me closer to it. There's such a force and energy that is so difficult to describe. A slow motion effect, of me trying to escape its hold, but it grips a hold me no matter what I do. I can't even count how often this has happened to me! Bear in mind, I have been

conscious of all these experiences, and try so hard to wake up. About a year ago, for the first time, I was able to fight back! It actually came into my body, and I had to fight it off! As I shot straight up in bed, I also realized for the first time I have been attacked by this entity, by it entering my body, for my entire life. I guess that part of it was suppressed for some reason. The next time it happened, I fought back as well. It has happened only once since then, and it was brief. I am still so confused about my realization in that moment, of it entering my body for so many years. Sometimes I wish I could be regressed, but the thought of reliving it and perhaps more vividly is overwhelming! I probably would be inviting it back, to cause more havoc on my psyche.

As far as the grey aliens and UFOs, unfortunately there are also in my experience. Twice this has occurred; clearly in my dreams, but I was completely conscious of them. The first time, I woke up with my heart pounding, and the reaction of me slapping the side of my head/ear, because it sounded like a high pitch bee-like sound went directly into my ear. The last thing in my dream was the grey with his hand on the back of my head near my ear, telling me there's nothing I can do, because he had complete control. I told myself consciously over and over again, to not panic and stay calm. But as you can imagine, I'm sure someone could be scared to death if it happened to them in real life, and even though it was a "dream" I couldn't help but to panic. I still can't believe I had that dream!

It seems to me that sometimes my dreams overlap into this reality, because the energy is still there when I come to. Many times, my eyes are open and I feel paralyzed (like what happens in REM). I feel my eyes fluttering as they open and shut, though I'm not coherent enough to wake up completely. I tell myself to roll over and I'll stop dreaming, because most times it happens while sleeping on my back. I've even called out consciously, "Please Help Me," in hopes

that someone will wake me up.

I've never let these experiences take over, in fact I've ignored them the best I could, so that I don't feed into it. However, I'm concerned about my seven-year-old daughter now. At times, she questions her own reality and for a good couple of hours thought she was in a dream. When I told her this is very real, she looked at me straight in the eyes and said to me, "No Mommy, this IS a dream, everyone is dreaming and they don't even know it."

Dreams or reality? They blend together in our encounters with all sorts of otherworldly beings. There seem to be factors about the state of dreaming that enable interdimensional portals to open. Plato called dreams "the between state," a real place where the human soul goes during sleep to meet the gods and demi-gods who are otherwise inaccessible. Entities, including Shadow People and ETs, are seen during the day during active waking states of consciousness. Our most profound experiences with them, however, take place in a liminal state between waking and sleeping. These experiences have a surreal quality to them, and so most people interpret them as a sort of realistic dream.

In the next account from a woman, ET abductions are preceded years in advance by the manifestations of Shadow People, and a single Shadow Man in particular::

The first thing I ever saw was a strange swirling pattern of colors on my wall every night when I was very young. My dad couldn't see it so I never questioned it further, but it was there every night. After this I just felt like something was with me all the time, just a strange feeling

Then when we moved house and I started seeing 3 shadow people, first it was only 2, a woman and child. But then a third entity entered the picture, he's hard to describe exactly, but he looks the shape of a gray ET about 7 feet tall. For a while no one saw anything but I was round a

friend's house one day and my friend saw him but he disappeared at sight.

I then let her know she wasn't just seeing things. I also told my best friend, and things began to happen to us both every time I visited her house - phantom voices, things being moved, doors slamming, creaking and banging from upstairs when only the two of us were in the house. She told me that she woke up feeling paralyzed and being choked one night, which is the same thing I often experience, although 'he' has never harmed me. I have night terrors also, they mainly consist of vivid alien invasions or abductions, and I would awake in bed with him standing over me.

To this day my family also experiences strange things, although they have never mentioned seeing him or having any weird alien dreams. It seems I might have gotten the worst of it. Things had died down for a very long time, but when I started to research the Djinn, now me, my family and my friend are again witnessing things. I'm not scared of him, it's just I don't want to be at the point where I can't sleep once again like before.

I'm not sure moving house would work though because if I visit my friend's house sometimes the activity will follow me. I sleep with my phone and iPod. I'm not religious so I don't think that prayer would help me, although sometimes if I really do not want things to happen, nothing will happen for a very long time. This however does not stop the bedroom visits. He also doesn't seem to be bothered about lights or TVs, as he has been known to mess with them in the past.

Visiting ETs are not always in the forms of grays. In the next case, a man reports a visit from a huge insectoid being that filled his bedroom doorway.

As frightening as it was, it does not come close to the fear generated by three small shadow beings who came later:

The insect being was almost transparent, or its outer cover was. I recall a distinct thorax/torso under what appeared to be large translucent wings. It also had a plumage or type of wings that draped back over its head, similar to an Indian head dress, but only longer, thinner wings.

I do not recall much detail about its face, but remember two large eyes and a beak like facial structure. The most striking detail was its bronze-gold/green/straw color. I attempted to match its color as closely as possible. This thing did not upset me like the three shadows I saw later that night.

The three shadows were maybe three feet tall and emitted a buzzing sound, much like welding aluminum at very high amperage. They had very black cloaks that I could see very well and gray faces with no features except the red eyes. They floated or hovered and circled me. The eye area was lighter than the rest of the face. I know what I experienced, others have also. The details are so exact it is eerie.

I know what I experienced... I know what I saw. These are refrains heard repeatedly from ET and UFO witnesses as well as witnesses to other kinds of nonhuman entities. The witnesses are not misled by imagination or mistaken impressions.

The buzzing sound is a common phenomenon in Shadow People and ET encounters. Experiencers also report hearing ringing and roaring sounds. My interpretation of this is that it is a characteristic of interdimensional shift, and occurs when holes are torn between dimensions. The same sounds are reported in near-death experiences and out-of-body experiences, in which people are catapulted out of physical reality. They also occur in some lucid dreams at the onset of being conscious of dreaming.

Suppressed memories

In some cases, memories of details about Shadow People are often vague, as though they have been obscured or blotted out. Many ET abductees believe their memories of abductions are suppressed by the aliens, and they seek out hypnosis to recall details. In the following Shadow Person case, a young woman reports visitations from childhood, and is troubled that other family members and even friends remember more details than she does. Here are some of her recollections:

Growing up, my sister and two of our friends always said, "Oh, remember those red eyes outside of the window!?" They said that we were at a sleepover I was six and they were eight and nine. This was at my old house, and I do not remember anything about it, I think I was too young. They said that there were glowing red eyes surrounded by a deep darkness, observing through the window.

When I was 12 years old (in a new home] I remember waking up in my room in fear. I felt like I was being watched. The feeling was so intense. I sat up and in the corner of my room I saw a silhouette of a tall male. He had no features and was "blacker than black." I have never felt such intense fear in my life. I felt dread, fear and terror all at once, and the atmosphere of the room made me freeze. I remember staring at it for seemed like hours. I wanted to turn on the light, yell for help, hide under the covers, but I felt that with any movement it would attack me.. The light switch was just out of arm's reach. I eventually leaned over quickly, and once I turned it on, it (the Shadow Person] was gone. In this experience, the Shadow Person just stood there, not moving at all.

When I was 12 my friend S. and I were in my bedroom talking in the dark before going to sleep. We were on two mattresses on the ground with the door open. We got an alarming feeling of terror and dread and the overwhelming feeling of being watched. After sitting up in alarm, we saw a hooded/ cloaked shadow standing in the doorway. It had slanted, glowing red eyes that seemed to be staring at me.

It was completely dark and it did not seem to have a definite shape. I would describe it as "shrouded in darkness," like it had a thin mist surrounding it.

The main thing that I can remember clearly is the red eyes, not the whole entity. It's like everything else was in my peripheral vision. This bit is really hard to describe... but above the fear I remember the eyes. Kind of like hypnotism I guess I felt like I couldn't look away and all I could do was stare at it. I don't remember much of before or after it happened. My friend said it lasted for about 10 seconds then it just disappeared. She said it scared her to bits," and in the next few days following I didn't want to talk about it and I didn't bring it up.

In subsequent experiences, the victim has experienced nightmares and a smothering presence:

I've had sleep paralysis and I'd wake up in complete fear. I didn't see anything but I felt as if something was holding me down. I remember becoming conscious and realizing I couldn't move or open my eyes. I felt like I was being smothered, like something was surrounding me but if I pictured it in my head it was like 10 centimeters away from every part of my body, like a bubble. I opened my mouth to scream and a high pitched wailing sounded in my head, it was either my scream rebounding back to me or whatever it was, was wailing in head. It was so high pitched I don't think it was me. I fought and when I moved my arm everything stopped at once. I opened my eyes, and my room was pitch black and I was alone.

At the time the victim wrote to me, she was contemplating hypnosis, but was fearful of what she might actually learn. Some ET abductees feel the same way. Hypnotic regressions of ET abductees have revealed considerable information about the beings, their methods, and purposes

for taking humans. But regressions have missed a key element: probing for the participation of Djinn. Abductees and the researchers studying and helping them assume, for the most part, that the aliens are not from Earth. It is impossible to rule out that at least some abducting aliens are from other planets, but the core of the abduction activity is centered right here on Earth.

Unmasking the Shadow People

The more I learned about Shadow People from the hundreds of persons who contacted me, the more certain I became that they are a form taken by Djinn. Black, usually featureless, often silent, coming and going at will, extremely intelligent, instilling fear - these are all hallmarks of the "Hidden

Ones." Some develop fascinations with people and follow them for lifetimes. They watch, they probe, and they do it by stealth at times when we are at our most vulnerable: stages of sleep. They do not like to be noticed themselves, and disappear when seen. Turning on lights may interfere with their ability to remain manifest.

Moving among humans in shadowy forms suits the Djinn, enabling them to pursue a variety of agendas. They can blend into the backdrop of any paranormal experience we might have, from hauntings to mysterious creatures to nightmare visitations to alien abductions. Their stealthy bed room visits in black may enable them to probe into our minds, enter our bodies, gather information about us, and use us for various purposes.

Chapter 3

Djinn Companions and Lovers

SEXUAL UNION BETWEEN humans and entities is as old as our oldest mythology. We have had intimate congress, for better or worse, with a host of deities, demons, ghosts of the dead, and beings from invisible realms such as the fairies. When our unions are good, they produce hybrid offspring who are revered, like the semi-divine heroes of Greek mythology who possessed superior strength, courage, and sometimes the ability to walk in two worlds. When our unions are bad, they yield monsters like the cannibalistic and bloodthirsty Nephilim, the progeny of humans and the disobedient Watchers. Various demons have seduced both men and women, sometimes quite unpleasantly, to produce horrid offspring.

In modern times, extraterrestrials have taken the place of gods, angels, demons, and fairies as our most likely supernatural bed partners. The ETs are not much in the way of seductive lovers, but instead seem to be primarily interested in our genetic material for the creation of hybrids for their own purposes, perhaps to infiltrate us on the planet, as abductees relate. The ETs' sexual encounters with us are sometimes pleasant and sometimes mechanical, done more like the way we might harvest genetic material from animals.

Westerners, however, overlook the most sexually active and seductive entities of all: The Djinn, who have been intermingling with us for centuries to produce hybrids with strange talents and powers. From their earliest lore, the Djinn have found humans to be attractive and appealing. Like their counterparts the fairies, they can become infatuated with us, fall in love with us, and even become attached to us as husbands and wives - sometimes without us realizing exactly what is going on. When it comes to sex, the Djinn are all about pleasure and seduction, unless they are out to torment someone. When they attach to a human who is the object of their desire, they take on pleasing forms as beautiful, voluptuous women and handsome, muscular men. Once they are attached, they become the worst of jealous lovers, interfering with, and even breaking apart, mortal relationships.

In Islam, a Djinn-human relationship is undesirable, even forbidden. The

offspring of Djinn-human unions reportedly look like humans but have Djinn characteristics. They are aggressive, possess formidable psychic powers and are capable of exerting a powerful influence on human beings. They may or may not have the power of invisibility.

Today it is not unusual in the Middle East for people of both sexes to claim that they have sexual unions and marriages with Djinn. The Djinn spouse is constantly jealous and likely to thwart any human relationships that develop. Anything that upsets the Djinn results in punishment.

Mahmoud described his own intimate encounters with a Djinn:

I was once seduced by a female Djinn. She had the face of a female friend of mine. The encounter was in a dream state and was so real. Her face changed to a scaly hideous creature with a tail in the middle of our "encounter." By the time I realized what had happened, it was too late. Physical signs of her presence were on my bed. ...

She would visit me occasionally at night, while I was fast asleep. I would wake up to something invisible standing on my bed. I could feel the pressure on my mattress as it sank down with her approaching. I would say a quick prayer and notice that when ever I did she would leave.

Their mannerisms, voices and so on are just so different from us. Things humans would consider monstrous are normal to them. Can you imagine your female wife grunting (and) growling.

They tend to be impatient. That is a trait I have seen with most Djinn - big egos and impatience.

The problem when Djinn are attracted to human beings is that they will destroy all your human relationships, because you are now their property. They can drive you insane literally if you develop cold feet after committing. Unfortunately it is not the type of relationship you can walk out of - these are lifetime agreements. You know the consequences of breaking agreements with the Djinn.

As long as a Djinn lover is happy, he or she may aid the human in many

ways, such as in business or career. All that will go up in smoke along with the Djinn if they become displeased. A parallel is found in fairy lore. A human spouse benefits greatly as long as the fairy spouse is happy. If the fairy becomes displeased, all the benefits are erased, and the fairy disappears. The Djinn will take away the benefits, but hang on to relentlessly punish.

In the following account, a man reports romantic dream visits from the same woman, who always tries to break up any dating relationships he has:

When I was a kid a woman came to me in my dream and told me it was time to go. I didn't know where or why, I just refused because I didn't want to leave everyone behind. And as soon as I decided to stay and told her no, she left. Since then (about 30 years), I'm visited by a woman often in my dreams. She's loving and I can feel she loves me like a wife or girlfriend. When I've dated, she has appeared in my dreams leading me away from my current girlfriend. Once the relationship ends, she comes back in my dreams and we spend time together. I've asked to kiss her in my dreams, I've even have asked if she is a angel. We've hugged.

This visitor is no angel, despite the affection, but fits the profile of an Djinn. The life-long attachment is characteristic of a particular a Djinn described below.

The qarīn/qarīnah

The *qarīn* (feminine: *qarīnah*) is a companion Djinn that is assigned to a person at birth and stays with that person throughout life, unless specifically banished by ritual. The *qarīn* is called a double and a brother or sister who lives below the earth.

As an attached and lifelong companion, the *qarīn* bears similarities to the *daimon* of Greek lore and the guardian angel of Christian lore. Like the *daimon*, the *qarīn* whispers in a person's ear to urge him or her either in the direction of good or evil - or both. By some accounts the *qarīn's* primary purpose is to seduce and lead its assigned person astray by whispering temptations in the ear. ("Qarīn" also refers to a human who is an unbeliever and also leads a Muslim astray.) By other accounts, the *qarīn* is more like a

guardian angel, providing companionship, comfort, and protection, including against illnesses and possession by other Djinn.

The *qarin* knows everything about its assigned person, including all of his or her weaknesses. Giving in to temptation and evil feeds the *qarin* and enables it to gain in power and strength. Leading a righteous life weakens it.

Some believe that people are always assigned a *Qarin* of their own gender, while others believe that a person has a *qarin* of the opposite sex. An opposite sex *qarin* is jealous of any romantic partners a person may have, and will ruin relationships and potential marriages.

Djinn have a reputation for being jealous and vengeful over anything, and the *qarin* is no exception. Parents warn children not to spend too much time looking into a mirror because the *qarin* will react in a jealous rage. A *qarin* who is displeased with its human can cause headaches, illnesses, night mares, bruises and other physical discomforts, insomnia, depression and loss of appetite. When the *qarin* exerts an evil influence, it disavows to God any responsibility for the human's actions on the basis of the free will, saying to the effect, "It wasn't me who made this person sin, I just helped him follow his own desires." Thus, the *qarin* reveals a Trickster nature in the deliberate and often malicious sowing of discord and chaos.

Muhammad, the Prophet and founder of Islam, acknowledged the *qarin*, but said he convinced his own *qarin* to convert to the faith. As a result, his *qarin* was purely benevolent and could do no harm. Muhammad said that Allah had granted him victory over his *qarin*.

Humans can marry their *qarin*, and in some cases can juggle both human and *qarin* spouses. The two spouses must not know about each other, otherwise disaster will follow.

Magical rituals exist for the summoning and commanding of *qarin*, but the rituals are considered risky. It is dangerous to try to force a Djinn to bend to human will. The commands might not work, and will only make the *qarin* angry. Trying to command or enslave the *qarin* can jeopardize one's health and sanity or even one's life.

Humans have their *qarin* for life, but in unusual circumstances, such as excessive suffering at the hands of a mean-spirited *qarin*, exorcism

measures can be undertaken to sever the connection. Reading certain verses of the Qur'an is effective. According to Muhammad, reciting the entire Surah al-Baqarah (Qur'an, 2:1-286) for three nights in a row is especially effective against a troublesome *qarin* as well as all Djinn.

Professionals also are sought to perform a banishing ritual but this, too, is considered a dangerous undertaking. If the ritual is not successful, the *qarin* will become vindictive and cause more problems.

An example of a *qarin* who became angry at human interference in his attachment to a human is the following story, sent to me by a woman named Diana:

A few years back, I started to notice something...off. It was like there was something with me. I couldn't see it at all, but when I was in my room and focusing, it was like I could converse with it. However, it has never been evil or demonic.

As a child, we had paranormal activity in my home, until it was blessed. We stopped having problems after that.

This creature, which I wasn't sure about, didn't seem to be angry or hurtful at all. Instead, it seemed happy to simply be with me and to converse. I never saw it, but I could feel something was there, and after some time a name came into my head, which I assume is what it goes by.

I was curious about genies, and so I started researching up on the topic, which led me to Djinn. This started making me wonder. One day while chatting with someone on AOL, we got into the topic of Djinn. He told me his experiences, about how his grandfather was into the whole thing, had books on doing it, and had taught him how to summon them and talk to them. I gave this person the entity's name, and asked him if he could try to figure this out for me.

Two days went by, and the person came on again. When I asked about it, he told me he'd had a bad experience. The Djinn was in fact fairly strong, and had been very upset with him for making him leave me. Also, he described to me a scene

of a room he'd been shown by the entity, and he described my bed - perfectly — and especially about a red article of clothing. I'd had a red silk button-up shirt I'd bought at a discount store, and when I came to realize it, I'd never noticed this entity until shortly after I'd come across that particular shirt.

After that, the person that had contacted the Djinn for me stopped coming online. I've worried that something may have happened, because of my curiosity. Because of my fondness for this entity, I've kept the shirt, even though it's too small on me now. It's still there, but I do not believe it is a dark/evil Djinn in any way...at least towards me,

I often hear from people who want to know how to summon and control Djinn. I tell them one word: Don't. The situation can easily go beyond control, and then you have real trouble.

Reality check

Sex with supernatural entities is accepted in many cultures, but to many Westerners it still falls into the realm of fantasy tales, imagination and folklore that are not "real." Several decades of media exposure to the ET abduction scenarios have conditioned the public to at least consider, if not believe in, sexual encounters with beings from other worlds. The Djinn still are largely unknown in the West, or are relegated to fairy tales. Our blinders enable them to operate in the bedroom with impunity.

The bloodline qarin

Generational links occur in repeated entity contact experiences. Shadow People follow families for generations, and ETs abduct generational lines. Djinn companions follow family lines, as well - even in America.

Eric was a virgin when he was married at age 25. His marriage lasted 10 years, and after his divorce, he lived alone. Soon he was visited at night by a woman who had appeared to him as a child, then had disappeared for years. Now she was back, looking as youthful and gorgeous as ever, but there was an odd catch: she was not human.

At first the extracurricular activity was a little frightening, but pleasant. Eric would awaken to see a voluptuous female form hovering over him, as though it had been watching him sleep. As soon as he awakened, she went into action. His entire body would be paralyzed as the form descended on top of him for a sexual encounter of intense pleasure and sometimes climax. Psychologists and skeptics might dismiss such nocturnal visits as wish fulfillments and release of sexual tension, but those like Eric who have had the experiences know they are not dreams, nor wish fulfillments, but real, full-blown sex with something not of this world.

I met Eric at a book-signing in Salem, Massachusetts. He had never heard of the Djinn until the publication of my book *The Vengeful Djinn* (2011), and my descriptions of sexual involvement with Djinn hit home. He had often wondered who or what was the seductive entity who visited him. He consulted psychics in Salem, and one told him she sounded like a fairy. I explained to Eric that more likely his amorous visitor was a Djinn.

In our subsequent communications, I learned some interesting angles to Eric's situation. The Djinn seemed to follow his family bloodlines, especially down the male side. His father and his younger brother have had similar bedroom experiences. Part of the family bloodline is Pennsylvania Dutch. Were the Djinn drawn to something in the family genetic makeup? The Pennsylvania Dutch are known for their "powwowing," the ability to heal and cast spells, which according to tradition follows a patrilineal line, from father to son. Eric's immediate male family members are not powwowers, but Eric is clairvoyant and he does have an unusual energy field. When he is angry or threatened, a wall of gray smoky energy rises up from his body at least three feet into the air. Some people, especially family members, can see it. It seems to be a natural expansion of the body's life force, the prana or chi energy that bolsters the aura (more on the universal life force will be discussed later). Perhaps this is one of the traits that draw the Djinn. "Maybe they feed on it, or it has got their interest," Eric said.

His father had the ability to levitate small objects to amuse friends when he was younger. His parents, who were devout Roman Catholics, told him it was the Devil working through him, so he stopped. Clairvoyance runs on his mother's side of the family, and his mother has the odd gift of manifesting four-leaf clovers where ever she looks.

Eric's experiences with the Djinn began early in childhood with "dreams" of a beautiful woman that he called a "demon woman." Probably she was his *qarinah*, making herself known to him. Eric told me:

I had a lot of night terrors and dreams of a demon figure or demon woman standing at the foot of my bed. The dreams started as early as I could remember. She had brunette hair and always wore a black robe. She was quite beautiful. I would wake up and see her always at the foot of the bed. She would start to move like she was going to climb up on the bed, but she never made it further than my feet because I would let out a scream for my mother. She would come in my room and turn the light on, and then everything would be fine.

L11)

Eric said the dreams stopped when he turned 12. "I started fighting back and learned how to control my dreams."

The "demon woman" made no more bedroom visits until Eric was 35 and on the verge of divorce. His wife had often complained about feeling watched in the house by some invisible presence, and she never liked being in the house alone when Eric had to work. His job required him to work at night, so she was alone during the scariest and deepest hours of darkness. "She told me she had seen things in the house, but I never believed her," he said.

He acknowledged that the Djinn may have played a role in the breakup of the marriage. "I don't think it liked her," he said. Shortly before his wife left the house, he awoke to see a presence watching them sleep.

Once alone in the house, Eric fell into post-divorce depression. He was visited by the mystery "woman." Over two years, she visited about 20 times, almost always on nights when it was raining and especially during thunder storms. She looked remarkably like the demon woman" who had visited Eric as a child. Her hair was light brunette or dishwater blonde, but now she wore a long pink gown or robe that showed off her curvy figure. She had high cheekbones. Eric gauged her height at about 5 feet 4 inches.

She had green eyes, and they were mesmerizing, blurring out the details of

her face. "They drew you in," said Eric. "When you stared into them it was hard to notice anything else."

Eric was not frightened and even enjoyed the encounters in the beginning. "It was kind of exciting for a while. I actually looked forward to it a bit. It was some type of interaction and it didn't bother me. Sometimes when it rained I would wonder whether she was going to come. A few times it was annoying because I knew I would have to get up and go to work and I needed my rest. But most of the time I looked forward to it."

His dog did not. Shortly before the Djinn would arrive, the dog would get up and run out of the room.

Once he fell asleep fully clothed on his couch in his living room. He awakened in the middle of the night and found himself naked with his clothes lying in a heap across the room. He had obviously come to climax. On another occasion, Eric was lying on his side and not yet asleep when the Djinn came. He felt himself forcibly rolled over onto his back and then paralyzed.

As time went on, Eric would occasionally get angry and order the Djinn to go away. Anger repelled it, and it always retreated. As it vanished, the paralysis left his body and he could move again. Whenever the Djinn wanted to protest his actions or cause trouble, it would move objects about in the house and knock over the trash cans outside.

There were other entity visitors besides the seductive Djinn. On one occasion, Eric fell asleep on his couch and awakened around 3 AM to see four Shadow People. They were all the same height, between 5 and 6 feet tall:

They were dark silhouettes, wearing black cloaks, and all I saw was their eyes. One had glowing blue eyes, one glowing red eyes, one glowing yellow eyes, and one glowing green eyes. They were all standing around me while I slept. My dog growled at them but did not get up, so I know she saw them, too. When they realized I could see them they went upstairs, all of them except for the one with the blue eyes. That one just stood at the bottom of the steps and just stared at me. I got up on my couch and stared back at it. I didn't say "get out" but I thought it. The one with the red eyes peeked down the stairs. The one with the blue

eyes looked up at it and went upstairs. I didn't follow them because it was dark in my house. I lay back down and went to sleep.

Eric told me that after our conversation in Salem, he visited one of the occult shops in town and had his aura photographed. The image showed what appeared to be a female form near him. At another shop, he saw a pendant that was a pentacle version of the Seal of Solomon. It matched a diagram he had seen in one of his books that talked about the seal as a protective talisman. He bought the pendant and wore it day and night - and the visitations stopped. So did the poltergeist activity.

A creepy Djinn visitor - or perhaps the seductive Djinn in another disguise - arrived one night when Eric was not wearing the talisman. Perhaps it was trying to make an end run and sneak into the house. "I came home at night, and saw a shadow figure that had the body of a person and the head of a dog walk between my house and garage and circle around behind me," he said. "I walked in the house and pulled out the Seal of Solomon. It did not come in the house or bother me."

Eric told his younger brother about his Djinn experiences and learned that his brother also had a nighttime visitor who started coming to him after he broke up with a girlfriend. His brother was living with the parents and was sleeping in Eric's old bedroom, where he had had the "demon woman" experiences as a child. "He said it as felt like someone was in the bedroom. He would lie on his stomach and feel someone climb up his leg and lay on top of him. He reached out to touch it and it felt furry. He turned to look but it held his face down. Once he was able to see that it had the face of a dog. He got angry and he told it to leave and it left."

Eric also mentioned his experiences to his father:

My father turned white when he heard me talk about my experience. Apparently the same thing used to happen to him after his first marriage was over. He went to live with his parents, and when he was alone in his bed he woke to see a golden, shimmering woman walking over to the bed. She climbed on top of him and pinned him down. He could feel her weight on top of him as he sank into the bed. He could not

move and when he told her to get off she immediately got off and disappeared just like it happened with me. It stopped when he met my mother, his second wife. I don't know if my granddad had these experiences, but it would not surprise me.

I asked Eric if the females in his family had ever mentioned having visitations. "My mom has awakened and seen a figure of a man," he said. "One time she thought she knew who it was, but when it spoke, it sounded like gibberish. She told it to go away and it disappeared into a corner of the room. When she was pregnant with me she had friends over one day to play with the Ouija board. The next morning she found all her clothes tied in knots in the closet."

About two months after we met, Eric met a woman and started a serious relationship with her. She moved into his house. He stopped wearing the talisman. Her presence seemed to keep the Djinn away. "I told her all about it, and it made her scared because she's in the house alone, but so far nothing has happened," he said. "I haven't had any experiences, either."

Eric was curious about one thing, however. When he was in Salem consulting psychics, he asked who was the "mystery woman in his house. They gave descriptions that did not match the Djinn - but described to a tee his new partner. That prompted Eric to ask her if she was the "mystery woman" herself. She was open to the idea.

"What if I was, would that bother you?" she told

Eric. "No, not really," he answered.

Eric told me he wondered if he had ever fathered hybrid offspring with the Djinn woman. It might be possible, I told him. Given the Djinn's lifelong presence and an interest in the family bloodline, there might have been deliberate measures to create hybrids that would be raised and conditioned in the Djinn world. If the Djinn are truly interested in reclaiming this dimension of Earth, then hybrids who can anchor into this reality would be an advantage.

I remarked at the cooperative politeness of all the Djinn visitors, who departed when ordered to do so, albeit only temporarily. In some of my cases, the Djinn

are not so nice. Eric has no doubts about the reality of the visits. "To me everything was as real as meeting you on the street," he said. "Either people believe it or they don't."

A year after our initial meeting, Eric was still free of nocturnal visits. The Seal of Solomon hangs in a dream catcher over his bed.

The Shadow Person qarin

I have received accounts of Shadow People who fit the behaviour of the *qarin*, making first contact in childhood, and changing over time, including growing in size, as the person they are attached to grows and changes. Sometimes it shows physical features such as eyes, hair and clothing, but usually the entity visits at night and lurks about the house in shadow form. It may also follow a person around to other places, and if the person moves house, the *qarin*, of course, moves as well.

When the human is young, it may act more like a companion and even playmate, and then become more sexual and physical as the person gets older. The shadow *qarin* may be quite affectionate and seem to have a great deal of genuine emotional connection to its human. "I began to feel a real fondness for him," said one woman of her Shadow Man companion. "I never felt alone."

Some experiencers have expressed the feeling that the shadow lover is a reliable friend and guardian. It might seem so - until the human does something to displease it.

*The Djinn can get physical, no doubt, and it just depends on how bold they are with the human they are attached to or fall in love with," said Mahmoud. "Djinn love isn't like human love you become more like property to them and it's a territory thing. I have yet to find a Djinn that will not want to exploit you if given the chance," said Mahmoud, adding that even believer, or religious, Djinn will still demand something in return for any favor or seemingly nice act on their part. "They make it very clear there is no charity," he said. "They are opportunistic and manipulative. They can seem like they are above certain things, or that certain acts are beneath them, while in reality they are not."

Djinn love is no love.

Chapter 4

The Fairy Connection

IN THE EARLY 19th century, David Williams, a Welsh servant, was out one night walking behind his mistress and carrying a load of bacon. He had a strange experience that caused him to arrive home three hours later than his mistress.

Williams saw a flash of light in the sky followed by a hoop of fire that descended to earth. A small man and woman, both well-dressed, got out of the hoop and traced a circle on the ground. Immediately a large number of small men and women appeared and danced around the ring to the sweetest music Williams had ever heard. Entranced, he watched them.

At some point — it seemed like only a few minutes later - the meteor like flash of light appeared in the sky again, and the hoop of fire descended. The little men and women jumped into the hoop and disappeared. Williams was suddenly alone in the darkness, his mistress nowhere to be seen. Confused, he made his way home - and discovered that three hours had passed.

Did Williams witness fairies or extraterrestrials? The beings descended from the sky like ETs but acted like fairies. In the early 19th century, visitors from space were unheard of. If his experience happened in modern times, it would be explained as an encounter with ETs with missing time.

On November 1, 1954, a woman set out to visit a grave in a cemetery in Poggio d'Ambra, Italy. She carried a pot of flowers. En route she spied a torpedo-shaped, metallic-looking craft unlike anything she had ever seen before. As she stared at it, two little beings about two-and-a-half to three feet tall came out from behind the craft. They were wearing gray coveralls and red leather helmets that reminded the woman of military garb. They had thin white teeth that showed as they smiled. The beings seemed joyful and playful.

Chattering in an unknown language, they came up to her and took away her pot of flowers. She screamed and ran away. She returned to the scene with other people, but the craft and the beings had vanished — along with her flowers.²

On August 21, 1955, a family in rural southwestern Kentucky was thrust into the Twilight Zone when little goblin-like-creatures from a UFO held them under siege. Billy Ray Taylor was visiting his friends the Sutton family at their farm located between Kelly and Hopkinsville. Around 7 PM, he went outside to fetch water from the well, and saw a shining object land in a gully nearby. The family dog barked in alarm.

Taylor and Carl Sutton grabbed their guns and went outside to investigate. They were astonished to see a creature about 3 to 4 feet tall walking toward them. It had large bald head, large round eyes, large pointy ears, skinny legs, hands with claws, and a thin, slit-like mouth. They fired their guns point blank into the creature. Unharmed, it did a backflip and ran into the woods.

The men returned to the house. The same creature, or another one looking just like it, peered in a window. They fired at it and then went outside to see if they had killed it. The creature was up on the roof, and it reached down to touch their hair. They fired at it again, but it floated to the ground and ran off into the woods.

So began the siege. Multiple creatures all looking alike jumped up and down on the roof and peered into the windows, as though intensely curious. The men fired and fired, but never seemed to harm any of the beings.

After about three hours, the terrified people dashed to their vehicles and tore down the road to the Hopkinsville police. The officers on duty laughed at their story but finally agreed to come out to the farm. When they got there, no creatures were to be seen.

As soon as the officers left, the little tricksters came back, tormenting the family until just before sunrise. The police returned, along with representatives of the Air Force, but no evidence of the creatures could be found. They had left as mysteriously as they had arrived.

The creatures resembled beings described in fairy accounts, yet their arrival coincided with the sighting of a UFO. Were they fairies or space aliens?

Recall that earlier I mentioned that a commonly seen form of Djinn is a small goblin-like creature with a bald head and long ears.

On September 16, 1994, a group of grade school children at Ariel School in Ruwa, Zimbabwe were outside playing during their recess. They witnessed three silvery balls of light appear over the school, disappear in a flash of light, then reappear. This happened three times, and then one of the lights descended and landed near the playing field, in an area where the children were not allowed to venture. The children watched as a small man about 3 feet in height appeared at the top of the landed object and walk toward them. He wore a light, shiny black outfit. He had a thin neck, big dark eyes "like rugby balls," a pale face, and long stringy hair falling below his shoulders. As soon as he saw the children, he disappeared, then reappeared behind the object. The object, which had the shape of a dome, took off rapidly and disappeared.

The children, who were interviewed by two of the leading ufologists of the times, Cynthia Hind and Dr. John E. Mack, had different interpretations about the identity of the little man. One interpretation was similar to accounts given by modern ET contactees and abductees, and another was similar to fairy lore. Some said they had communicated with an alien, who told them humans are destroying the Earth by polluting it. Others believed that beings had come to eat them - perhaps a reference to the local folklore concerning *tokoloshies*, hairy little beings sent out by shamans to attack and eat people who offend them, especially children. *Tokoloshies* are likened to demons, poltergeists and zombies.

.

ETs and fairies

These and many other accounts of fairies from earlier times and ETs from modern times demonstrate the blurring of boundaries when it comes to any kind of contact with nonhuman beings. Throughout history, have we ever really known who or what we are encountering? Our interpretations are entirely dependent on the worldview context of our times. Hind, who was Africa's star ufologist for over a decade until her death in 2000, often remarked that Africans in rural areas who had limited or no exposure to the

modern ET pop culture would interpret strange beings - even those from the skies - within frameworks that were familiar to them:

In Africa, the question of UFOs is even more intriguing than in most countries, as one dealing here with the cultures of many different people who each react in a different way to visual effects, and where often the report is from a remote and almost inaccessible place. These people are not exposed to any UFO reportage; they have no TV, perhaps not even local radio. They cannot read, and, if they do, it is almost 100% certain that UFO books are not available.

And yet they too report strange craft, and contact cases (some times with entities in silver suits), lights that appear and disappear in a totally inexplicable fashion, and other typical UFO manifestations. Their only explanation for the strange happenings is that they involve "the spirits of their ancestors" or "the ghosts of their forefathers."

There is nothing in the African background or culture which explains or pertains to UFOs, so it would be difficult - if not impossible - for them to hallucinate or imagine an alien concept!

Folklorist Peter Rojcewicz, who has written extensively on Ets, Men in Black and fairies, notes that our perception of otherworldly beings is subjective; fairies, UFOs and their occupants are not "things" in absolute sense.

Because we are not trained to see "no-things" we do not see accurately, or see nothing at all. Because fairies and UFOs exist on the border between fact and fiction, it is unlikely they can be easily perceived in their totality... The world of human experience is constructed by those who experience it, and so our knowledge of the world is our interpretation. Our cultural lenses color our perceptions

according to value we generally agree on. 4

Modern researchers are not the first to note that identity of beings and how we perceive them have changed throughout history. W.B. Yeats, as much an accomplished occultist as a poet, said that the forms of fairies are determined both by the shape-shifting of the fairies themselves and by the ability of the human mind to notice them:

Many poets and all mystics and occult writers, in all ages and countries, have declared that behind the visible are chains and chains of conscious beings, who are not of heaven but of earth, who have no inherent form, but change according to their whim, or the mind that sees them.⁵

John A. Keel, a pioneering researcher in ufology, mysterious creatures and other unexplained phenomena, held a similar view:

The mind is unquestionably involved in many UFO and psychic experiences, and, very probably, in a number of our more bizarre monster sightings. Thus we can only see what the phenomenon wants us to see and we only remember what it wants us to remember. 6

Ufologists and folklorists have compared ETs and fairies for decades, noting the similarities in their appearances and disappearances, descriptions, and behavior. Folklorist Thomas E. Bullard has stated that ETs and fairies are virtually identical save for a "change of address and mode of transportation."⁷ Ufologist Jacques Vallee also has drawn many comparisons between fairies and ETs. In *Passport to Magonia* (1969), Vallee says that UFOs are "nothing but a resurgence of a deep stream in human culture known in older times under various names" and that "the modern global belief in flying saucers and their occupants is identical to an earlier belief in the fairy faith."

The connection between ETs and fairies does not rule out the possibility that at least some of our visitors who seem to come from "outer space" really do travel from other planets. More likely, ETs are not extraterrestrials, but ultraterrestrials, a term coined by Keel to describe beings from other dimensions related to the Earth. They are from inner space rather than outer space. This idea, too, has been explored for decades by ufologists such as Vallee, Hind, Keel and others who have been puzzled over the lack of physical evidence, the psychic and paranormal components that are part of encounters, and the strange, contradictory and erratic manners of contact. Said Vallee::

To put it bluntly, the extraterrestrial theory is not strange enough to explain the facts... I believe that the UFO phenomenon *represents evidence for other dimensions beyond spacetime*; the UFOs may not come from ordinary space, but from a multiverse which is all around us, and of which we have stubbornly refused to consider the disturbing reality in spite of the evidence available to us for centuries.

Keel had a darker view in which humans are pawns of some unknown intelligence that toys with us like a cat worries a mouse. *UFOs: Operation Trojan Horse* (1970) was the first of several books in which he expanded on his ideas about the interconnections of all psychic phenomena and entity contact experiences of all kinds. According to Keel, our reality and beliefs are manipulated by some unknown, nonhuman intelligence. Phenomena are generated to perpetuate certain belief systems. It's all a big phantasmagoria, a "Disneyland of the Gods," which may explain the bizarre nature of so much that is paranormal, and why we never get solid answers or evidence. We humans have no control over the process, he said, and we can only wonder at what is the real agenda.

The interdimensionality of UFOs and ETs raises new questions about who the visitors are and what they want by interacting with humans. There is an agenda - one that emerges in the uncovering of the Djinn.

Djinn and fairies

The ET-fairy link leads straight to the Djinn, who have powerful connections to fairies. In *The Vengeful Djinn*, I compared Djinn to other entities, and found the strongest similarities to fairies. Djinn and fairies share so many traits that it would be possible to say they are one and the same. The quirkiness of ET encounters, the sinister aspect of abductions, the messages that make no sense, and other phenomena all make complete sense from the perspective of Djinn, the masters of shape-shifting and deceit..

Fairy lore is ancient and universal. The term "fairy probably comes from the Latin word *fata*, or fate, which refers to the Fates, three women who spin, twist and cut the threads of life. "Fairy" came into popular usage in medieval times in reference to women with magical powers. "Fairy" originally meant *faerie*, or a state of enchantment.

In ancient Persian lore, the fairies were called Peris. The Irish poet Lady Jane Wilde said the word "fairy" originated in ancient Persia:

The belief in a race of supernatural beings, midway between man and the Supreme God, beautiful and beneficent, a race that had never known the weight of human life, was also part of the creed of the Iranian people. They called them *Peris*, or *Ferouers* (fairies)... Every nation believes in the existence of these mysterious spirits, with inys tic and powerful influence over human life and actions, but each nation represents them differently, according to national habits and national surroundings... 9

Here are some of the key correspondences between Djinn and fairies. A fuller discussion of the similarities is presented in *The Vengeful Djinn*.

-They were early inhabitants of Earth who lost their dominance. Both fairies and Djinn preceded human beings. The fairies retreated as humans advanced and

spread. The Djinn were cast out for failing to pay homage to Adam. Deprived of their place and status, both Djinn and fairies developed a deep and long-term grudge of resentment and desire for revenge.

- *They are the Hidden People.* The Djinn are called the Hidden Ones because they are obscured from human sight. Both Djinn and fairies are invisible most of the time.

- *They have long life spans but are not immortal.* Fairies and Djinn live for hundreds or thousands of human years.

- *They are organized into societies and families.* They marry, have offspring, are ruled by royalty, and keep pets, most notably dogs and cats.

- *They consider themselves superior to humans.* Iblis refused to bow to Adam because he said Adam was inferior to the Djinn. Iblis told Adam, "...if you are given mastery over me, I will surely disobey you. And if I am given mastery over you, I will destroy you."¹⁰ Iblis told God that he would ambush humans at all opportunities and turn them away from God. Fairies know they are superior and will exercise their powers when provoked.

- *They are territorial.* Djinn and fairies do not appreciate human beings trespassing on their territory, especially their homes, which are associated with remote areas. Trespassing, vandalizing or building on their property brings swift retaliation in the form of accidents, ill health, bad luck, and even death. Both are protective of certain trees on land they consider theirs.

- *They are easily provoked.* Djinn and fairies punish people who displease them in many ways, from pranks to serious assaults. Sometimes they assault and bedevil people for their own entertainment.

- *They cause possession.* They take over bodies for their own amusement, or to cause physical and mental illness.

- *They are linked to the demonic.* The abusive behavior of Djinn and fairies has associated them with the forces of evil and darkness.

- *They are weakened by iron.* Since ancient times, iron has been held to repel unwanted spirits.

One person's fairy is another person's Djinn.

ETs, fairies and Djinn: All together now

There are few, if any, black-and-white boundaries in the paranormal - no neat little pie charts denoting where one type of being starts and ends and another begins. Our perceptions of otherworldly environments and beings are shape-shifting in and of themselves: blurry boundaries where things slide and bleed into each other. In addition to the links between fairies and Djinn and ETs and fairies, there are traits shared strongly by all three. While it may not be possible to state that all ETs, fairies and Djinn are one and the same type of being, the overlaps are evidence of one being the other. Perhaps the beings themselves have not changed over time, only our perceptions and definitions of them have changed.

Here are some of the significant overlaps shared by ETs, fairies and Djinn:

Appearances

ETs, fairies and Djinn come in an assortment of sizes and shapes when perceived by humans: lights, shadowy blobs and figures, humanoids of varying sizes, ugly forms, beautiful forms and creature forms. Yeats said of the fairies, "They seem to take whatever size or shape pleases them." Djinn are known for assuming myriads of shapes, and ETs have been reported in many sizes and shapes. They are all masterful shape-shifters.

One continuing characteristic among all three is a hat or cap. Head coverings were standard attire in earlier times, so it is not unusual that we perceived beings wearing something on the head. Today head coverings are not essential, yet we still perceive many beings wearing something on the head a hat, cap, hood, or cowl. The abducting grays have no head coverings, but beings seen on board ships sometimes wear hats and caps. As noted in the chapter on Shadow People, why do so many shadow figures wear hats, cowls and hoods? Perhaps the reason is to disguise something about the head that must be hidden from human view. Shadow People often appear to have a misshapen head. Perhaps there is a feature about their heads that Djinn can not completely change, and so

they cover it up.

Supernormal powers

ETs, fairies and Djinn all have the ability to render themselves invisible, to pass through solid objects such as walls, to move at incredible speeds, and to levitate into the air. They all can paralyze humans and have hypnotic, compelling gazes. They possess unusual strength. They have psychic abilities and healing powers. They have supernormal powers of destruction. Some of them are willing to impart their secrets to humans - usually for a price.

Airborne travel All three possess the ability to transport themselves through the air, moving and changing directions at incredible speeds, and appearing and disappearing capriciously at will. In ancient lore, the Djinn move in whirlwinds and storms. Their Shadow People forms glide and zip, and appear, disappear and reappear in a different spot without obvious movement. Fairies travel in airboats and specter ships, on spectral animals, as balls of light, and simply in their own forms. ETs move about in crafts and ships, some of which are seen only as mysterious lights in the sky.

Destruction from the air

An interesting shared characteristic is the destructive aspect of some of the airborne activity. The Djinn bring pestilence and disease in the winds. They lift people, especially evil ones, up into the air and toss them about. In some parts of the world, there are traditions of airborne evil Djinn, the *shayarin*, who mix with the souls of certain people who are condemned to wander the earth: evil people, suicide victims, and those who drown at sea. At certain times of the year the horde rises up out of the sea at night and travels from one part of the across the land, causing insanity and havoc. When they pass overhead, disembodied voices fill the air, and people can sometimes hear what is being said. In Africa, entire villages turn out on these nights, to make banging sounds to chase off the horde.

Fairies punish people who displease them by lifting them up into the air,

carrying them about in violent winds, and dropping them repeatedly into bogs, swamps, brambles and bushes until they are bruised and bloody.

Some fairies join the Wild Hunt, a retinue of the ghostly restless dead, demonized pagan deities, witches, souls of the unbaptized dead, and demonic entities. They ride through the sky on red-eyed demon horses, accompanied by spectral hounds, shrieking and making hideous noises, and attacking humans who might be out. They abduct people and carry them off to their secret locations. The Wild Hunt rides out every night, but is especially strong on the nights of the full moon. Christianity associated the Wild Hunt with pagan holidays. In earlier times, people tried to ward off the Wild Hunt by banging pots and pans, or by leaving offerings of food.

The Sca Draugs are a noxious type of bloodthirsty fairy. They are also known as the Host and the Unforgiven Dead: the souls of the unbaptized dead, and also the souls of violent men who killed others during their lives. In some accounts, they are fallen angels. Hideous beings, they fly through the air at night, screeching and looking for mortal prey. They pick humans up, carry them off, torture and abuse them, and then drop them to their deaths.

The Sluagh fly in great swarms high in the air every night, especially around midnight. They fight each other, and their blood falls like rain onto the earth. When not slaughtering each other, the Sluagh swoop down and capture mortals who are out. They carry their victims over both land and sea and drop them into mud and bogs, sometimes killing them. They also force their captives to be slaves, and to shoot poisonous, fatal arrows into humans and animals, causing sickness and death; the victims were said to be "elf-shot." The Sluagh also abduct cattle for their food. In a story from Scotland at the turn of the 20th century, the Sluagh abducted a man and then instructed him to shoot a neighbor's daughter, who was out milking a cow on the same night. He shot the cow instead, and the Sluagh carried it away:

The next morning he (the abductee) went where the father was and said to him, "You are missing the cow." "Yes," said the father, "I am." And the man who had shot the cow said, "Are you not glad your cow and not your daughter

was taken? For I was ordered to shoot your daughter and I shot your cow in order to show blood on my arrow." "I am very glad of what you have done if that was the case," the father replied, "It was the case," the neighbor said.¹²

It was also believed in earlier times that when the Sluagh consumed all the meat of the cattle, they removed the hides, rolled up old men in them, and dropped them to the ground.

Airborne fairies stir up a "fairy blast," powerful whirlwinds that, like the winds of the Djinn, bring ill effects and can even render a person unconscious.

Modern versions of these traits are found in ET lore. According to Rojcewicz all of the negative effects of fairy contact are duplicated in UFO lore."¹³

Waves of ET activity are associated with waves of cattle, horse and other animal mutilations, in which dead animals are found with surgical-type incisions, soft tissues and organs missing, and a complete absence of blood. Animal mutilations gained worldwide attention in 1967 when a horse, Snippy, was found dead and mutilated in the San Luis Valley of Colorado.

UFO witnesses have reported seeing cattle levitated by tractor beams and forces emanating from ships.

In the Travis Walton abduction in 1975 in a forest near Snowflake, Arizona, Walton's co-workers said a beam of blue-green light shot out of the hovering spacecraft and levitated Walton about 10 feet into the air. The beam released him and he dropped to the ground. The co-workers, believing him to be dead, fled the scene but returned shortly, to find him missing. Walton was missing for five days. He was found at a location distant to where he had last been seen. He later described an abduction experience in which he was taken aboard a craft, subjected to a medical exam, and dropped off at a gas station near Heber, Arizona.¹⁴

If we transposed Walton's experience to an earlier time, he would have been considered the victim of fairy-blast.

The "elf-shot" poisonous arrows have become in modern time the deadly beams of red light shot from spacecraft. In South America, these lethal craft are called *chupa chupas*, or "suck-sucks." Victims who are shot by the lights believe they are sucked of their vital energy or blood.

Chupa-chupa is a variation on the term chupacabra, or "goatsucker," a

vampiric creature prominent in the folklore of Puerto Rico and Central and South Americas, and which also has been reported in the southern United States. The chupacabra stands erect on animal hind legs, has arms ending in claws, is covered with fur, has membranes like bat wings, and glowing red eyes. It sucks the blood from farm and domestic animals, killing them. Some chupacabra attacks on animals have been linked to UFO sightings.

From July 1977 to November 1978, a wave of deadly chupa-chupa UFO activity around Colares, Brazil killed people and at least one animal — a dog - and left others seriously ill. In all, about 40 people, most of them adults, received medical treatment for injuries. Most of the victims were struck by mysterious beams of red light that severely burned their chests. Blood tests showed the victims to have abnormally low levels of hemoglobin. Some of the victims did not die directly from the burns, but suffered a wasting away over a period of months, and then died. One victim likened the feeling to being pierced with a needle - which is similar to the pricks people felt when they were elf-shot by fairies 15

Vampirization of blood and life force

Vampire traits are present in ETs, fairies and Djinn: they have a taste for, or adversely affect, human blood. They also drain the life force. Victims of night-time encounters, sexual encounters, and even chance encounters with all three of these entities have, throughout history, suffered a loss of vitality and exhaustion. Some have suffered wasting-away illnesses in which their health deteriorates, sometimes fatally.

Lethal UFO attacks have been reported for decades. Victims believe that the ETs in the UFOs had come specifically to suck the blood or energy from people. In 1946, a man in Brazil was struck by a UFO beam of light while returning from a fishing trip. His flesh fell off his bones, and he died six hours later. His body rapidly decomposed. In 1954, UFO beams reportedly burned to death an entire village and their livestock in Nairobi, Africa one night. In 1969, a man near Anolaima, Colombia was irradiated by a UFO. He became seriously ill and blue spots appeared all over his skin. He died within a few days..

In *Confrontations* (1990), Vallee documents cases of *chupa-chupas* that affected three towns in Brazil in the early 1980s: Parnama, Sao Luis and Belem. The bodies of some of the victims looked as though they had had the blood sucked out of them. The victims were either out hunting and fishing at night, or sleeping in hammocks at home. The ones who were attacked while sleeping reported that they awakened to feel hit by a heavy weight on their chest that immobilized them. One pregnant woman suffered bruising from the UFO beams, and then miscarried. Another woman was struck in the chest by a beam, which left two puncture marks on her left breast. The woman had a decrease in red blood cells, and suffered dizziness, headaches, weakness, and numbness. She deteriorated, fell into a coma, and died. A barking dog was struck by a beam, and suffered a wasting away until it died about three weeks later.

Ufologist Bob Pratt also documented South American cases in *UFO Danger Zone: Terror and Death in Brazil - Where Next?* (1996). One victim, a woman, described how she was sleeping in a hammock in her house one night when she was awakened by a green light shining in her window. The beam turned to red. She saw that it came from what appeared to be a pistol wielded by something that looked like a man wearing a diving suit. She could see it only from the chest up; it had very small eyes. It pointed the pistol at her chest and shined a red beam on her three times. The beam was hot and penetrated her like a needle in three places on her right breast. She felt as though blood was being taken out of her. She was paralyzed and terrified, but was able to scream, awakening her cousin, who came to her aid. The mystery creature disappeared. The victim was taken to the hospital and treated. For weeks, she suffered a headache and fever and general malaise. The beam left three pinpoint scars in a triangle shape.

One doctor who treated victims of the UFO attacks observed that they had small puncture wounds on their arms. She thought they had had blood taken.

Not all human *chupa* victims die. Survivors suffer burns and chronic physical complaints such as weakness and dizzy spells; some suffer mentally with fear and paranoia.

The animal mutilations often happen in waves. Hundreds of cows, sheep,

dogs, horses and other animals have been completely ex-sanguinated in addition to having their tongues, eyes and vital organs removed with surgical precision. Animal predators and cruel humans are not satisfactory explanations.

It is not possible to completely ex-sanguinate a body, for capillaries collapse at some point and retain blood. Also, the wounds left on the carcasses show signs of intense heat, as though lasers were used. The evidence of intense heat is similar to the burning heat experienced by the human *chupa-chupa* victims..

Beyond the bloodthirsty airborne fairies discussed, there are other fairies who like the blood of humans. Red Cap is a small, wizened fairy whose cap is red because it is stained with the blood of his victims. He is a short thick set old man, with long prominent teeth, skinny fingers with talons like eagles, large fiery red eyes, hair streaming down his shoulders, iron boots, a pikestaff in his left hand, and a red cap on his head. He lives in old, ruined castles and peel towers in the borderlands between England and Scotland, and attacks unwary visitors. He is far stronger than he appears. Red Cap uses his talons to tear the flesh of his victims.

The *tomtin* are ugly fairies who dress in red and attack travelers in the woods and lonely spots. They drag people down and beat them to death with chains, poles and barbed sticks, and then lap up their blood like dogs. They cut out the hearts and livers and take them back to their master, Nacht Ruprecht, a man-like creature with antlers and wearing straw. In German folklore, Nacht Ruprecht terrorizes the winter countryside, peering into windows and beating people to death with a flail.

In a bizarre twist, the *tomtin* have a tie to St. Nicholas, who evolved into Santa Claus. In his early guise, St Nicholas was not jolly or nice. He dragged children from their beds to quiz them on Christian catechism. Those who could not provide correct answers were beaten with sticks or pelted with hotcoals. The *tomtin* licked the bloody wounds. As the image of St. Nicholas became friendly, the *tomtin* evolved into his cute elf helpers.

The Djinn's taste for human blood goes back to ancient times. Earlier I mentioned the blood sacrifices done to appease Djinn. There are also

accounts of Djinn attacking people for their blood. In Middle Eastern lore, the *palis* attacks victims at night and kills them by licking their blood out through the soles of their feet. "*Palis*" means "foot licker." It is also used as the proper name of this type of Djinn.

An Armenian legend tells of a *palis* named Dakhanavar, who lived in a cave near Mount Ararat. Dakhanavar did not want any outsiders penetrating into the surrounding mountains, or counting the 366 valleys among them. If anyone did so, he killed them by sucking out their blood through the soles of their feet. According to lore, travelers in the desert slept with the soles of their feet touching to prevent access by the *palis*.¹⁶

The Testament of Solomon tells the story of Ornias, a shape-shifting Djinn who vampirized the life force of King Solomon's favorite boy servant. During the construction of the Temple of Jerusalem, Ornias came every evening at sunset and took half the wages and food of the boy, and then sucked out some of his soul through his right thumb. The boy wasted away and grew thin. When Solomon discovered what was going on, he asked God for help. God sent the archangel Michael with a magic ring engraved with a seal that would enable Solomon to bind and imprison all Djinn, male and female. Solomon told the boy to throw the ring at the chest of Ornias and order him to come to the king.

The next time Ornias appeared to the boy at sunset, he was in the form of a flaming fire, a favorite of the Djinn. The boy threw the ring and told him to go to Solomon. The king enslaved Ornias.¹⁷

The seal on the ring became the magical Seal of Solomon a symbol that has been used effectively against the Djinn by modern victims, as noted elsewhere in this book.

Blood is the vehicle of Djinn possession: they enter the body and circulate through the blood.

Blood is more than a vehicle for them, however. Mahmoud confirmed the Djinn's appetite for consuming human blood:

The Djinn are very basic especially when you deal with them — it all boils down to one thing, the blood sacrifice they can get. They veil their primitive side in sophisticated talk, but

when it comes down to it that is all they are looking for. All we are to them are talking chickens. Sure, the chicken may hold an intelligent conversation with you for some time, but at the back of your mind, you know that when the time comes you will eat it without hesitation or a second thought. At the end of the day, the chicken is just food and you are superior to it, or so you think. That is the point of view that they seem to come from. I have seen too many times this resentment they all have towards humans. They are ready to lash out at you at a moment's notice.

They penetrate the human body and feed from within, gradually draining you of all your blood. This takes time, but you eventually die, maybe within a month or two months after prolonged sickness. The draining that can kill you instantly if they do it intensely is the life force draining. This you die of in less than a week. They prefer blood over draining the life force, however. I would liken it to taking vitamin tablets or a food supplement to actually consuming food that contains those vitamins. Sure, vitamin tablets are convenient but not as enjoyable as consuming the actual food itself. So whenever they get an opportunity to consume without giving themselves away, they do so.

They maintain as much secrecy as possible - they don't want to expose themselves. This whole ET phenomenon gives them an excuse to reach out to humans and take them by force. It also gets humans into being more receptive towards them. They can induce visions and implant false memories. You could be in a forest somewhere in a trance-like state as they consume your blood, while in your vision you see yourself in a ship.

A chilling, literally blood-curdling possibility.

Abductions

The abduction phenomenon is a central part of the modern ET encounter experience. According to most accounts, ETs usually abduct by taking people in their sleep or paralyzing them in bed, and levitating to their ships. There they awaken to frightening medical exams and sometimes sexual intercourse with aliens. The ETs vampirize humans by taking genetic material, sexual fluids, fertilized eggs and fetuses. Many abductees report exhaustion and wasting, and many feel that they have been implanted with false, or "screen" memories to mask the actual abductions.

Some abductees are given information about their captors, as well as dire warnings about the fate of the Earth. The abductees are returned to their beds; sometimes they like 'Travis Walton, are returned to other locations. Fairies abduct people by enchanting them into paralysis and levitating them off to Fairyland. Sometimes they lure people into Fairyland. It is a one way trip and victims remain there permanently - unless the fairies relent and return them to Earth-side. In 1692, Reverend Robert Kirk of Aberfoyle, Scotland, said he was allowed to visit Fairyland and return, because the fairies favored him. Kirk was drawn into a fairy mound by a brilliant light that lit it up from the inside. There he found graceful, beautiful humanoid beings living in a glowing land. He made repeated visits to Fairyland, and was given instructions in their secret ways. He learned that some were good and some were evil. Eventually he broke their laws and was imprisoned there forever.

The Djinn are known for abductions as well, taking people to their own remote lands for sex, marriage, trial in Djinn courts, and other purposes. Djinn may act on their own, such as avenging an act committed by a human, or they may abduct on the orders of their leaders.

People who venture near Djinn territory risk being taken. In January 2012, a young man from Oman went riding his motorbike near Mudar Mountain and disappeared under "mysterious circumstances. The mountain is believed to be inhabited by Djinn, and local residents told authorities that they knew the young

man had been kidnapped by the Djinn. Authorities combed the area by helicopter and with search dogs, but found only the man's motorbike. Local residents said that many strange things in the area are done by the Djinn, and recommended that religious authorities be consulted to persuade the Djinn to release their captive. Some of the residents offered sacrifices to the Djinn to appease them. One of the sheikhs had a vision and spoke to the Djinn, who said they were keeping the young man in a grotto in the mountain.¹⁸

In October 2010, a 22-year-old Malaysian woman, Siti Balqis Mohd Nor, disappeared several times at strange hours without explanation from her village near Jerteh in the state of Terengganu. She was later found in odd places such as a cemetery, and once was found inside a cement mixer. Sometimes she found herself suddenly alone in strange places, without knowing how she had gotten there, or how much time had passed.

Her disappearances were blamed on Djinn. The woman's parents obtained religious help from the local *bomoh*. One *bomoh* prayed and recited verses from the Qur'an inside the house while another recited verses outside. A figure was seen running away from the house. One *bomoh* pursued it and captured it, containing it in a jar. Eight more Djinn were captured trying to escape the house, and were imprisoned in jars. The Jars were thrown into the sea. The young woman's unexplained disappearances stopped. ¹⁹

Missing time

In cases of fairy, ET and Djinn abductions, the humans are held captive as long as the abductors wish. When they are returned to ordinary reality, they are often dazed and confused. They are shocked to discover that a great deal of time has passed. David Williams, the bacon-carrying Welsh servant mentioned at the start of the chapter, had three hours of missing time. Today, if he were regressed by hypnosis, he probably would recall an abduction experience at the hands of the fairies. In his day, such experiences were explained as a state of enchantment, a sort of limbo caused by the fairies.

In Fairyland, time passes slowly – what seems like a day might be years or even an entire lifetime by human reckoning. In Djinn lore, the Djinn live for thousands of human years, and the passage of time has a different meaning

for them as well. Keeping a human captive for a Djinn day might be months or years for the captive.

Some ET experiencers also have missing time. The first dramatic reported case of ET missing time occurred in 1961, when Betty and Barney Hill encountered a landed craft while driving late at night in New Hampshire. They lost awareness, and the next thing they knew, they were driving home again and two unaccounted hours had passed. Under hypnosis, they recalled being taken aboard an alien craft and subjected to medical examinations.

Changelings

Both fairies and Djinn have long traditions of stealing human babies and leaving their own "changelings" in their place. In both cases, they are envious of more beautiful human offspring. Fairy changelings are often weak and sick. Though ETs have not been leaving changelings, some of the abducting entities have told humans that their own offspring are sickly and in need of human genetics.

Hybrids

Fairies, ETs and Djinn share an intense interest in fertile sexual coupling with human beings. Some fairies and Djinn reportedly develop romantic attachments to humans; in both cases, they may become spouses to humans; Djinn even share a human with that person's mortal spouse. In the case of ETs, the connection is more mechanical, with the objective of producing hybrids. In all three cases, the hybrid offspring have a combination of features that give them advantages of both worlds.

Fairies and ETs have a "sickly baby" aspect to the hybrid phenomenon. In fairy lore, many of their own babies were ugly and sickly, and so they abducted more desirable human infants - even children and youths - and left their own sickly children in their place. The human parents were distressed

to discover their child had been replaced by a "changeling."

Similarly, some ET abductees have been told by their captors that the ETs desire human genetics to revivify their race; their own offspring are wan and sickly.

In Djinn lore, the hybrid offspring are formidable, possessing Djinn powers, but accompanied by some physical defect that gives away their Djinn heritage.

Connection to the underground

Djinn prefer to live in or near caves, mine tunnels, holes, among rocks, and in remote locations where they will not be bothered by people. They are the people of the subterranean underworld.

Fairies live beneath the ground in a secret land where they, too, will not be bothered by people. The doorway is a mound or fort that is closed to mortals; it is an interdimensional portal. Occasionally a person accidentally stumbles through, or is taken through by abducting fairies. Some fairies live in mine tunnels, caves and among rocks.

The ET connection to the underground is via the reptilians. Some reptilians are said to originate in other star systems, and some originated on Earth and live below the ground. Reptilian ET forms have been seen in abduction experiences, as will be discussed later.

Healing and prophecy

Fairies have the power of healing and prophecy, and sometimes bestow these gifts upon humans. ETs who say they are benevolent tell humans that they have come to help humanity in various ways, such as the healing of illnesses. They show people visions of the future and make dire predictions for the human race and the planet if people do not mend their ways.

Djinn are conjured by some magicians for the purpose of healing and protection. They are reputed to be the force behind prophecy, for they eavesdrop on angels to know the future, and whisper what they learn to

humans. However, Djinn are considered to be untrustworthy and dishonest, and the source of false prophecy.

A new mythology

Since the late 1980s, the media and entertainment industries have focused on two dominant images of Ets, both negative: a small, hairless, bug-eyed "gray" who abducts humans, and slime-dripping insectoid or reptilian monsters. Fairies have receded to children's tales, and the Djinn, if they are present at all in Western media, are treated like silly wish-granting genies. Yet every day, people of all ages have real experiences with one or another of these entities. Contact has been going on as long as human beings have been on the planet.

The contact experiences slide below the radar of the average person. They are bizarre events that happen to "other people," fodder for a television show or a theater film. Mainstream media treats them as fringe events that affect fringe people.

We cannot afford to ignore contact experiences, and leave their meanings and implications unexplored. Activities are going on with our tacit approval via our lack of awareness and our unwilling to become engaged on a serious level. In his comparisons of fairies and Ers, Vallee noted the need for a new mythology, and opined that one may be in the making. It is not happening fast enough - we are being outpaced by beings who have the upper hand.

Mythology is not something consigned to the past; it lives in the present as well, shape-shifting as our perceptions shape-shift. Clearly, we need a new mythology as part of our coming to grips with the reality of other worldly beings. We especially need to know about the Djinn, who may be orchestrating much of the show.

Chapter 5

Djinn and ET Abductions

THE TRACKS OF the Djinn in ET abductions are evident throughout the reports and literature compiled by abductees and their researchers.

Few have recognized the evidence, and so the presence of the Djinn has gone unnoticed

During my early research on Shadow People, I noticed that a significant number of respondents volunteered that they had also had ET contact and or abduction experiences; some of them wondered if there were a connection. Shadow People and ETs did not always come at the same time, but both were unpleasant bedroom invaders.

The frequency of the connection made me wonder about what else lay hidden from view. I drew up some questions and sent them out to my entire Shadow People database. I asked if experiencers had also had ET encounters, and for details relative to Shadow People manifestations.

The reports I received back revealed a strong connection between Shadow People and ET abductions. Shadow People preceded the onset of abductions, sometimes by years. They often began their appearances in childhood. Sometimes abductions began soon thereafter; sometimes they commenced in youth or adult years. The pattern that emerged was as though the Shadow People were either an advance guard or a distraction. Mixed in with Shadow People were reports of the well-known grays with the huge, slanted black eyes, as well as insectoids, reptilians, humanoids, and assorted other beings. Different guises are characteristic of Djinn behavior, to confuse and distract to draw attention away from their real identities. Do Djinn account for all these manifestations, or some of them?

If this connection exists now, then I suspected there would be evidence for it in the abduction literature going back decades. I was right. The evidence is everywhere, and it didn't take me long to find it. Many ET abductees report instances when they feel uneasy about a "presence in the house, and see dark forms. Shadow People experiencers report the same phenomena. The dark figures come through walls, ceilings, floors, closets and out from under the bed: the classic "bogyman" manifestation.

I would like to make clear the following:

- Not all Shadow People experiencers are ET abductees, and vice versa
- Having a Shadow Person experience does not mean a person will become an ET abductee
- The extent of the involvement of the Djinn in ET abductions is unknown
- The exact purpose and nature of Djinn involvement is not known
- In analyzing existing accounts, I am not stating that all ETs are Djinn, or that abductees are wrong in their interpretations of their experiences; only that the evidence of Djinn is apparent and should be taken into consideration in evaluating and re-evaluating cases

In examining some of the more prominent ET cases in the literature, I have zeroed in specifically on phenomena that overlap with Djinn - they are well embedded in the ET abduction scenario. Whether or not they are the sole beings responsible for abductions is not known, but they have a significant presence that has been misinterpreted for decades - and which enables them to operate with impunity.

Most abductees report some or all of the following in their experiences.

They are all related to the Djinn:

- Shadow People, often with hats, capes and hoods, of varying sizes, sometimes with blue glows of light around them
- Shadowy animal or animal-like forms
- Materializations of beings through walls, windows, floors, etc.

- Paralysis in bed
- "Dreams" that are not dreams
- Flashing lights and balls of light, especially inside homes and in bedrooms
- Poltergeist effects in homes such as footsteps, pounding and knocking, lights and appliances being switched on and off
- Tingling sensations, disembodied voices, and buzzing, humming, clicking and roaring sounds
- Vehicle problems
- Attractive "women" with blonde or white hair that make contact in childhood to instill trust, and in adulthood to have sex with male victims; sometimes they shape-shift to hideous forms
- Attractive "men," but less common than the female humanoids
- Reptilian and giant insectoid forms
- A host of different entity forms that may appear only once, or multiple times
- Telepathic communication
- Compelling, hypnotic eyes
- Vampirization of energy and health, sometimes accompanied by sensations that the entity has entered inside the human host
- Generational interference that involves family lineages

In making the following analyses, I am not contending that the original research interpretations were right or wrong, only that there are other considerations that have come to light, and other possible interpretations. Regardless of how many entities might be involved in abductions, the Djinn are hidden among them.

Tujunga Canyon

The earliest well-documented case of ET abduction occurred in the 1950s, just a few years after Kenneth Arnold's sightings launched the modern UFO era. The case was investigated by ufologist Ann Druffel for five years; she was then joined by parapsychologist D. Scott Rogo. Their book *The Tujunga Canyon Contacts*

(1980; 1989; 2006; 2008) describe the contact and abduction experiences of five women who were living in the canyon.

The canyon, northeast of Los Angeles, is renowned for its UFO activity, close encounters with aliens, and other paranormal phenomena. The abductions, which took place over a two-decade period, began in 1953 with two of the women, and then later involved three more. The account by Druffel and Rogo is one of the first to describe contact with the now-common gray, black-eyed small aliens.

But the little grays were not the only players on the abduction field. The Tujunga abductees described dark shadow beings with few features. In early hypnosis sessions, abductee Sara described one of the first encounters, in which solid shadows materialized and took her and a roommate, Jan, away.

According to Sara, she and Jan were awakened by a bright light outside. Then Sara saw shadow figures moving across the lawn. They looked like shadows but were solid, not transparent - she could not see through them. They passed through the glass windows to the bedroom without breaking them, and passed through doors to materialize in the kitchen. There were a number of them; Sara said the place was "congested" with them. They grabbed hold of Sara's and Jan's arms and exerted a mental pressure that enabled them to control the women.

Sara said, "They're so shadowed. It looks like they're wearing...almost like a black ski mask, but the whole thing is black and just their eyes are out."

Asked to describe one of the aliens from the head down, she replied, "His head is - is elongated. It's not even egg-shaped. It's like an egg, but one that isn't really wider at the top or the bottom...it's oval; it's oblong... If there's any hair, it's underneath this skintight - it's like a ski mask, but it's almost part of the skin. It's as if he were sprayed with a can of flocking; as if he were wearing a coat of flocking." "Does he look like a penguin?" asked the regressionist.

"No. No, because there's no beak," said Sara. "He has eyes that are like a ski mask - just like a ski mask, with two openings for the eyes, but I see only what we would call flesh color. I don't see eyeballs, or whites, or lashes. It's almost like being flesh-colored membranes.... There's a little movement behind that flesh-colored membrane, as if it were an eyeball without a lid."

Sara had just given a description of a Shadow Person: a humanoid figure all in black, with a misshapen head. As noted earlier, some experiencers see eye sockets that have various colors in them.

Sara went on to say that the shadow figures had "rounded feet enclosed in some sort of boot," but it was encased in what appeared to be the black one-piece garb. They wore gloves or mittens that separated what looked like thumbs from the rest of their hand. The palms of the mittens were flesh colored and the backs were black.

One of the other abductees, Emily, corroborated Sara's description of the shadow figures:

They were tall and thin with flat and elongated facial structures, and were completely covered with what appeared to be black clothing.

I contacted Druffel to ask her about the shadow figures in this and any other abduction case she had investigated. She had not investigated the Shadow People phenomenon itself, but was familiar with the research of others. Including Shadow People with grays, reptilians and other beings as possible shape-shifted forms of a particular entity matches her own hypothesis about "so-called alien abductors," she told me.

The Tujunga Canyon Contacts ushered in an examination of abductions that expanded throughout the 1980s and 1990s, with more abductees coming forward to share their stories.

Budd Hopkins

Budd Hopkins was one of the first researchers to delve deeply into the abduction phenomenon, producing several best-sellers. *Intruders: The Incredible Visitations At Copley Woods* (1987) was adapted for television and brought the topic home to millions in the mainstream.

In *Intruders*, Hopkins profiled the experiences of the Davis family: Parents Robert and Kathie, and sons Tommy and Robbie. Hopkins was contacted by the Davises, who lived in Indianapolis, in 1983, after a UFO in the form of a brilliant light touched down on their property.

Many of the events and phenomena in the Davis case are peculiar to the ET abduction scenario: bug-eyed grays, aliens with glowing and flashing lights

around them, brilliant lights, bedroom visits and paralysis, missing time, and hybrid offspring. Other phenomena are peculiar to Shadow People and Djinn, such as dark figures and black clouds. Overlapping phenomena among Ers, Shadow People and Djinn include nighttime visits, missing time, paralysis, glowing lights around the mystery visitors, brilliant lights in the background, a host of entities of varying sizes and shapes, and hybrid offspring. I believe the Djinn produce these diverse effects as part of their masquerade.

In Chapter 4 of *Intruders*, entitled "Robbie, Tommy and the Bogey Man," Hopkins recounts a night visit experienced by four-year-old Robbie of a short, big-headed man who appeared in his bedroom and said he wanted Robbie's three-year-old brother, Tommy. Robbie screamed for his mother, who told him he had a "bad dream."

"Mommy, this ain't no dream," the child insisted. He described the visitors as "a man with a big head came in my wall and went in my closet and kept going back and forth, and he wouldn't let me move. And he had lights around his head."

The "man" communicated with an "invisible mouth," because when he talked, nothing in his face moved.

Robbie was so traumatized by the visitation that he refused to go upstairs to the bedroom all the next day, and also would not go upstairs to use the bathroom - and so wet his pants twice. Obviously, the boy was terrified. Kathie, the mother of Robbie, later saw a small, gray-skinned entity emerging from her sons' room. She made a drawing of it, and Robbie identified it as the figure he had seen.

No additional details of the entity's description were obtained from the child. From the information given, the entity moved through solid matter, communicated telepathically, and caused paralysis in bed. Shadow People exhibit the same characteristics, and sometimes are described as short with big or misshapen heads. They are usually solid black, but sometimes have glows and flashing lights around them, and sometimes glowing eyes of different colors, but not black like the eyes of the grays. Severe trauma can result from Shadow People visits, including bedwetting in small children.

An even stronger connection to Shadow People was experienced by Kathie's brother-in-law, "Johnny." In November 1983, Johnny and two friends went on a hunting trip near Spencer, Indiana, and stayed in a small cabin. He awoke at

dawn one morning and went into the living room, where he observed a bright beam of light shining down on the woods nearby, moving about like a searchlight. There were two figures standing outside, and he thought they were his companions. The next thing he knew, he was still standing in the living room, but it was well past dawn and his friends were fixing breakfast. Johnny had just had an episode of missing time, one to two hours in length.

A month later, Johnny had a scarier experience. One morning around 5:30, he set off to work in his pickup truck, which had a double cab. He glanced in the rearview mirror – and was shocked to see a "man" sitting in the back seat. Said Hopkins:

Unbelieving, he turned his head and looked over his right shoulder. The figure, apparently a normal man, was wearing what Johnny later described as somewhat resembling a big western hat. He appeared solid, darkish, clearer in silhouette than in surface detail. Johnny panicked, pulled on the brake and jumped out of his truck. He ran twenty feet or so and then turned around. As one might have guessed, the truck was empty and the surrounding open ground provided no cover for a running figure. 4

Johnny's hitchhiker was most definitely a Shadow Person, dark, silhouetted, wearing a hat, and capable of appearing and disappearing in an instant. Johnny was convinced that the shadow man was connected to the figures and light he had seen on his hunting trip. He was so spooked by his experience that he sold his beloved truck the next day. At the time of Hopkins' writing, he was still declining to explore either experience under hypnosis.

Who were the two figures near the woods? Were they Shadow People as well? And what was their connection with the aerial light phenomena?

Several months later, in the spring of 1984, Johnny was confronted on a dark road by two small men who suddenly materialized and communicated telepathically. He lost six hours of time.

Hopkins could not explain the identity of the aliens:

Whatever the nature and origin of the gray-skinned UFO occupants — and there are many exotic theories -- they are not us. They are not short humans, like midgets, dwarfs, or the members of certain African tribes. They are physically, culturally and technologically different from us, alien. They have been called angels, demons, robots, space-travellers from another solar system, "ultra-demensionals," "time-travellers" and so on, but there is one essential fact — they are not us. They are alien. And as such their purposes and goals - even their mental processes — are possibly unknowable by us humans. 5

None of these labels have ever sufficiently addressed the full spectrum of the aliens' appearances, actions and apparent purposes. "Djinn" is the only good fit. Hopkins noted that abductees are deliberately subjected to pain: "Pleasure and pain, they're interested in those two aspects." Humans are a resource for them and they want to experience what we do he said.

Hopkins died in 2011, leaving behind a substantial body of work in ufology and abductions. Prior to his death, I talked with him about Shadow People and the Djinn. He was unfamiliar with them, and dismissed the appearance of Shadow People as something related to extraterrestrials and abductions. He did not see them as a phenomenon spilling out into other areas of the paranormal, with cross-connections leading to something other than beings from other planets.

David M. Jacobs

David M. Jacobs was the first major abduction researcher to penetrate the dark side of ET abductions. An associate professor of history at Temple University in Philadelphia, he became interested in UFOs in the 1960s. This focus turned to abductions, and he has regressed hundreds of experiencers. He put together a chilling scenario of the hidden agenda of the alien abductors.

The accounts of some of his clients show, like others, the presence of beings that are probably Djinn. In Jacobs' first book, *Secret Life* (1992), there are accounts of an ugly "Taller Being with reptilian-like leathery and striated skin. The being has enormous black eyes, no nose, an angular face and no hair. It wears a white, gray or black garment that resembles a lab coat, smock or robe. Sometimes it wears a hat that looks like a surgeon's cap. The Taller Being directs the activities of the grays.⁷

In his second book, *The Threat* (1998), Jacobs states, "I have had people remember figures that looked like Abraham Lincoln wearing a stovepipe hat, men wearing fedoras, angels, devils, and so forth." In addition, there are grays, Nordics, reptilians, insectoids and robed or hooded tall beings. Nordics are probably human-alien hybrids, he says, they are blond, blue-eyed and handsome or beautiful. A being who seems to have the most authority is taller than all the rest, an insect-like being who wear a cape or robe with a high collar. He observes and issues instructions, and engages in staring at abductees with hypnotic eyes to manipulate brain activity and emotional responses. The "unaware abductees" do not see what is really going on, but explain their experiences as ghosts, hauntings, encounters with the devil, communication with animals and even out-of-body journeys to the astral plane.

More than many other researchers, Jacobs probed the deception involved in abductions, and describes characteristics and actions quite accurate to Djinn. Again, I stress that the Djinn associations are from my own interpretations.

The abductors plant images in the minds of their victims to confuse, deceive and manipulate. They are not here to help humanity, no matter what they tell abductees. "It is significant that the aliens almost never say or do anything to help the environment; they only lament its desecration," says Jacobs. They present many images of mass destruction on the planet, probably to raise fear.

The abductors *are only interested in their own agenda* (my emphasis). "Virtually everything that aliens do is in service to their abduction program," Jacobs says.¹⁰ The heart of it is a breeding program to create hybrids - "homo alienus." The hybrids are not for the purpose of rejuvenating the aliens' own genetic stock, which is what some aliens tell their victims. The hybrids are Manchurian candidates who are infiltrating the planet and who will follow the direction of the

aliens. The evidence, says Jacobs, "clearly indicates that the aliens are conducting a widespread, systematic *program of physiological exploitation of human beings.*" 11

Jacobs identified what he calls the "Personal Project Hybrid," in which a hybrid attaches itself to a human for a life-long relationship from childhood, with the eventual goal of sex and reproduction for more hybrids. The hybrid ages at the same pace as humans. They influence their human subjects in many ways. Some are monogamous and some have multiple sexual liaisons with humans. While some hybrid sexual relationships are affectionate and loving, others are abusive. One of Jacobs' clients became interested in a new man, and the hybrid "was angry and vengeful."¹² Others engage in abusive relationships of "fear, intimidation and punishment"¹³ with threats of death and the ability to destroy everything in the victim's life in a moment. .

The Personal Project Hybrid bears an astonishing resemblance to the Djinn *qarin*. As was noted earlier, the *qarin* is attached to a human from birth and ages along with the human. As the human matures, it shows a sexual interest. If the human engages in sexual activity with the *qarin*, or even marries the *qarin*, the Djinn partner is often jealous of any human romantic or sexual relationships its human may have. The *qarin* will sometimes go to great lengths to disrupt or break such relationships. Some *qarin* are affectionate and others are manipulative and abusive.

Have the Djinn transferred their *qarin* relationships to the abduction scenario where they can be carried on more openly among victims who are willing to believe in sexual ETs?

In *The Threat*, Jacobs posits that the abductors must come from other planets in the known universe, for when they talk about their homes they point to the sky, and do not talk about parallel dimensions, time travel or alternate universes.

Dinn, however, have no compunction about lying about themselves. Making humans think they are beings from other planets keeps their true identity well hidden. Interestingly, when abductees are given impressions of the aliens' home world, many of them see desert-like terrain¹⁴ a favorite of the Djinn.

Whitley Strieber

In 1985, best-selling horror author Whitley Strieber had the first of many encounters with alien beings at his cabin in upstate New York. He wrote about the experiences in his first nonfiction book, *Communion: A True Story* (1987), which also became a best-seller and took ufology by storm. Here was a celebrity adding weight to the cause.

Strieber never concluded that the beings were ETs per se, but remained uncertain about their identities. He referred to them as "the visitors." Some of the beings he described in *Communion* were clearly Shadow People, however, with hoods and a hat. And, as in other abduction cases I have researched, their appearances came at the onset, harbingers of other experiences to come, including abductions.

Strieber's first inkling that something otherworldly was paying a visit came in October 1985, when he saw a bright light out in his yard at night. Suddenly there was a hooded figure in the room. He recalled under hypnosis:

I was looking into the far corner of the bedroom, where I saw a dark shape about three feet tall standing in the shadows... I saw something that looked like it had a hood on it... My memory was of seeing the shape sweeping across the room and realizing with a feeling that galvanized my "whole being it was something totally unknown to me, glaring at me from right beside my bed in the dead of the night... I then emerged spontaneously from hypnosis... I relived fear so raw, profound, and large that I would not have thought it possible that such emotion could exist.

About two months later, on December 26, he saw another short figure about three-and-a-half feet tall in his bedroom. It wore a hat and exhibited behavior characteristic of Shadow People, pecking around a doorway to look at him:

I could see perhaps a third of the figure, the part that was bending around the door so that it could see me. It had a smooth, round hat on, with an odd sharp rim that jutted out easily four inches on the side that I could see... I could not see the face... [W]hen it was close to the bed, I saw two dark holes for eyes and a black downturning line of a mouth that later became an O.

Strieber had many experiences with the visitors." The grays punched him awake at night. Presences came who did not identify themselves. Friends who stayed at his cabin also had experiences, including visits from the dead.

After the publication of *Communion*, Strieber was inundated with thousands of letters from people describing similar and other ET experiences. Since then, he maintains that he regrets going public about the experiences, because of the mockery from the public and also from the UFO community.

Strieber published a number of books, nonfiction and fiction, on ETS. In *Transformation: The Breakthrough* (1988), he describes more experiences and abductions (his son was abducted as well), and encounters with ugly insectoids and punishing humanoids that are tall and dressed in black. In *Breakthrough: The Next Step* (1997), he discusses challenging his own fear in order to move to another level. In his subsequent encounters with the visitors," he learns a great deal, including that the Earth is a cosmic school. He says his own relationship to God became stronger. In *The Secret School: Preparation for Contact* (1997) he reveals his attendance of a "secret school" in childhood; among the lessons were the Earth's history and apocalyptic future.

In 2012 Strieber published *Solving the Communion Enigma*, in which he revisits his original experiences and links them to a broad range of phenomena - crop circles, animal mutilations, visits from the dead, and so on - that are part of an expansion of human consciousness and concepts of reality. One of his stranger experiences was the manifestation of giant black spiders note: a favorite form of Djinn on the ceiling of his bedroom, which he interpreted as part of a test of his love for his wife, Anne.

According to Strieber, all of our explanations of the unseen reality and Its

residents are imaginary, for we see only a tip of the iceberg. The paranormal does not exist - only parts of natural reality that we do not yet understand. Strieber rejects the idea that humans might be exploited by alien visitors.

John E. Mack

Another celebrity to take ufology by storm in the abduction field came from science and medicine. John E. Mack, M.D., was a psychiatrist on the faculty at the Harvard Medical School, and in addition was a Pulitzer-Prize-winning biographer. His interest in ET abductions brought a gravitas sorely needed to a field whose stories seemed fantastical to many. Mack's book *Abduction* (1994) profiles the abduction experiences of some of his patients. Mack never mentions Shadow People or Djinn, but the accounts feature evidence of their presence:

Shadow People and hooded beings

Some of the abductees reported visits by a Shadow Person prior to the onset of their abductions. For example, Sheila was visited by Shadow People between ages six to eight. She saw a tall figure emerge from her closet, walk toward the bedroom window and disappear. She screamed. Her parents rushed in and reassured her that it was only a "bad dream," but she knew it was not - it was real. She and her brother also saw an entity they called "The Gaw."

Well into adulthood, Sheila kept her closet door closed out of a lingering fear. When her abductions started, she associated the Shadow Person with the abducting aliens. The grays resembled "The Gaw." The abductors, she said, vampirized her energy and drained her.

Abductee Arthur recalled being onboard a ship filled with dark people like "little monks" with robes and hoods. They were "intense" and "serious."¹⁵ Paul said a hooded figure on a ship showed him the world and told him that he, Paul, was going to fix it.¹⁶

Blue lights, flashing lights, mists and clouds and buzzing The Djinn often have a blue glow around them, and they can take the form of mists and cloudy substances. Sometimes their arrival and presence is accompanied by flashing

lights and aberrations in electricity, such as house lights going on and off, car engines dying, appliances stopping, and so on. Experiencers may hear buzzing, humming or roaring sounds, presaging manifestation. ET experiencers report the same, as Mack reports:

The first indication that an abduction is about to occur might be an unexplained intense blue or white light that floods the bedroom, an odd buzzing or humming sound, unexplained apprehension, the sense of an unusual presence or even the direct sighting of one or more humanoid beings in the room, and, of course, the close-up sighting of a strange craft.¹⁷

Abductee Jerry and her brother Ken had visitations in childhood in Kansas City, Missouri:

Her older brother, Ken, also had peculiar childhood experiences, including seeing unusual white and blue lights outside the window and terrible "nightmares" of "someone" entering his room while he was awake, ¹⁸

Abductee Catherine saw an alien materialize in shaft of blue light, and her living room was lit with a bluish tint light. Eva was enveloped by a "mag netic" light blue light when she asked to meet the aliens. Carlos saw a female figure who seemed to be in charge, and who was always surrounded by a mist. He also saw large robot-like creatures with big black eyes, and reptilian and insect bodies. They were, he said, "scary."¹⁹

Abductee Peter was visited by small hooded beings during abductions and also a little blue man who is one of the "blue people." The visits were accompanied by a high-pitched noise like crickets and a chilling fog that filled the room.²⁰

An alien told Peter that they were studying humans to know how to prepare them for the shock of seeing the aliens:

We... want to study the chemical reactions of the brain,

and how people will react in order to know when it is time to be present... For as we measure the impulses... we will know at what level the shock will come in, so we will be better able to control it so we will be in tune with the human beings as they go through this shock process, as they go through the unfolding of seeing us for the first time.²¹

Interdimensional openings

The interdimensionality of abductions and the materializations of the beings is underscored in descriptions of breaks opening in physical reality. According to Mack:

Quite a few abductees have spoken to me of their sense that at least some of their experiences are not occurring within the physical space/time dimensions of the universe as we comprehend it. They speak of aliens breaking through from another dimension, through a "slit" or "crack" in some sort of barrier, entering our world from "beyond the veil."²²

Abductee Sara described a phenomenon "like a huge shattering of glass" followed by a "razor blade thin" slit "opening between this Earth/physical dimension and the realm from which the beings come." In one experience an "insect-like" being materialized through a mirror in a hotel room, then shape-shifted into a shimmery, reptilian, snake-like, serpent-like form with "red vein-things" that made the head look like "a body turned inside out."²³

According to Eva, the aliens told her "their purpose is to live in unison... not to take anything from us. They want to study us to see how they can communicate... There are different dimensions, words existing within worlds... and to go from one to the next is like a roller coaster. You need to speed up the energy, and then you go to another dimension where the reality is different."²⁴

Shape-shifters

The abducting aliens sometimes seemed fairy-like and playful, similar to the Hopkinsville entities. Ed saw spirits in the form of "mirthful little playful creatures, just kind of just bounding around". One told him, "Well, see, I put myself like this so you could sort of look at me and relate to me. But I don't have to be like this if I don't want to be like this, and I can change myself into a multitude of forms..."²⁵

Compelling eyes

Regardless of their form, the abductors have compelling eyes and use an intense gaze to overcome their victims. "There is power in those eyes," said Sheila. Abductee Jerry said he was taken by an ugly being with "devil eyes":²⁶

Their eyes. I just hate 'em. I hate 'em... It's like they just look right through you... They go inside you" and gave her a "really weird unnerving feeling... It's as if I'd lose myself, and don't feel I have any control."²⁷

Catherine was stared at and had no choice but to look back, and felt the being knew everything about her and what she was thinking. She wondered if aliens seek out people with wounded childhoods. Said Mack, "In the case of some abductees the aliens were entering the energy fields or responding to certain vibrations of a quaking soul." ²⁸

Human-alien origins

Some abductees told Mack they felt they were part alien, and were somewhat sympathetic to their abductors.²⁹ They wondered about their possible extraterrestrial origins. An ancestral genetic connection occurs in other cases as well, such as that of Karla Turner below.

All of these forms and phenomena are associated with Djinn.

Good for humanity?

Mack said that the abduction phenomenon was not a mass fantasy, but an external reality experience. Overall, he saw the encounters as positive for humanity as a whole, involving an expansion of consciousness for the purpose of mastering our future and the future of the earth: He said the abductees are "participating in some sort of species merger and evolution. The purpose of this project may be to create new life-forms that are more spiritually evolved and less aggressive, while retaining the acute sensory possibilities that accompany the dense embodiment of human physical existence."

He acknowledged the deception in abductions, but also gave the abductees the benefit of the doubt in terms of their motives:

I would not say that the aliens never resort to deception to hide their purposes, but that is, in my view, too narrow or linear in interpretation... [We may be witnessing something far more complex, namely an awkward joining of two species, engineered by an intelligence we are unable to fathom, for a purpose that serves both our goals with difficulties for each..

We have only sketchy knowledge, for example, of what the hybrid program, which seems to lie at the center of the abduction phenomenon, is really about," he said in his closing thoughts. Yet my overall impression is that the abduction process is not evil, and that the intelligences at work do not wish us ill."31

It is doubtful that Mack considered the Djinn - they are not mentioned in his work — for he might have reached the opposite conclusion. The hostile Djinn are not interested in assisting us with a noble expansion of our consciousness, or helping us survive better in the world. They are looking for ways to take the

earth away from us, and a hybridization program is part of their large and varied agenda.

Unfortunately, Mack was not able to evolve his work. In 2004 he was struck by a truck in London and died of his injuries – an incident many in ufology believe was no accident.

Karla Turner

In 1988, Karla Turner's life shape-shifted from ordinary to bizarre when she and her husband, Elton started recalling experiences that pointed to ET abductions. They underwent hypnosis and uncovered unsettling life-long experiences. What was more, they were not the only ones involved: their son David, their friends, his friends, and others they knew were part of this world as well. Turner, a university professor in Texas, left her teaching career to devote herself full-time to abduction research.

Turner's first book about the abductions, *Into the Fringe* (1992), contains many descriptions that are evidence of the Djinn: Shadow People; insectoids; humanoids who approach abductees for sex; flashing lights and glows; black clouds and mists; reptilians; poltergeist effects, and more. The recalls surfaced after Turner read the abduction-related works of Budd Hopkins and Whitley Strieber. She was skeptical of such experiences - and then her memories of her own experience from an early age started coming back to her. Elton said he had had odd experiences early in life, too. The recalls initiated new experiences - or perhaps an awareness of experiences that had been happening to them all along.

In May 1988 Elton (who has the pseudonym Casey in *Into the Fringe*) recalled ET abduction experiences when he was less than two years old. At age 13 he woke up to find himself in unfamiliar surroundings, approached by "a strange woman, dark-eyed with white wispy hair," who got on top of him and engaged in sex. He dismissed it as a dream.

In 1966 he took his fiancée out for a romantic evening of parking. They were approached by four thin beings covered in black clothing who had no facial features. The beings were interested in the fiancée, who left with them. Elton and his fiancée had two hours of missing time.

Elton also recalled that in 1971, when his son was about two years old, there were poltergeist activities in the house and an earthquake that only Elton experienced. His son began talking about a "black man" who came through the wall of his bedroom. The black man talked to him, but the son would not say what they discussed.

Meanwhile, Turner remembered an early childhood recurring dream of tall insect-like being who stood next to her and held her hand and told her it was her mother. Later she learned that their son, David, had been in the presence of a giant praying mantis during an abduction.

In 1980, Turner walked into her backyard and felt an "electric shimmery feeling" saw saw four 5-foot "people" who looked like gray shadows, featureless. They greeted me warmly and told me they were my ancestors, that I carried all of their memories and wisdom in my body. I laughed at that, but they assured me that there were ways that I could tap into that knowledge and use it," she wrote.

12

Once again, we see that Shadow People are involved in early experiences. When Djinn appear, people sometimes feel sensations like electricity in the air and see shimmery glows and lights. The claim to ancestor lineage is consistent with Djinn, too, for they have intermingled with humans for centuries. The insectoid and the sexual woman might be shape-shifted Djinn, assuming different roles and forms to confuse and distract their victims. Replacing human body parts might refer to a Djinn hybridization program.

Turner and her husband learned from their grown son, David, that David's friend James said he also had had visitors at an early age. In his experiences, there are Shadow People and a fairy-like being: fairies, as you recall, have a strong connection to the Djinn.

According to James, he had had bedroom visitors his entire life. Once when he was young, he heard noises in the house at night and got up to investigate. To his shock, he saw a strange skinny man dressed entirely in black, who was picking up various things around the house as if examining them.

James rushed to tell his parents that a prowler was in the house - but they acted unconcerned. They told him not to worry and go back to bed. Later, in looking back, James wondered if they knew exactly what he had seen, and were accustomed to it.

Also as a young child, James was visited by "Mr. Greenjeans," a small creature that glowed green. The first time Mr. Greenjeans showed up in his bed room, James awakened to see all of his toys moving by themselves. Mr. Greenjeans approached the bed and told him not to be afraid. Mr. Greenjeans made frequent nocturnal visits, and talked to James. As the boy got older, the fairy-like man disappeared and was replaced by a taller, featureless creature who came and talked to James while he lay paralyzed in fear. He never remembered the content of what was said. Then he was visited by a woman who told him she wanted to replace some of his body parts, including his eyes, with better parts. She said she and her group were interdimensional – from the ninth dimension- and were friendly. She warned James that other beings like the grays were from the fourth and fifth dimensions and were not spiritually developed, but regarded humans like insects. 33

In another fairy connection, Turner recalled awakening at night hearing a disembodied voice say "eliomi" or "elianni." Later she found the term "Ellyllon" in a book called *The Goblin Universe* by Ted Holiday and Colin Wilson. It referred to pygmy elves or nature spirits who were associated with the "illusions of flying saucers.

Black clouds, mists and forms

Both Turner and her husband had encounters with black clouds and mists. They did not know about Shadow People, who sometimes appear as black clouds and mists rather than in humanoid form.

While in trance Turner recalled driving home alone from visiting her parents, a 240-mile trip. She said:

... I saw ahead of me on the interstate a large black cloud descending rapidly. It covered both lanes and the

shoulders, so there was no way around it, and it appeared so suddenly that I couldn't apply my brakes in time to avoid it. It was daytime, and the darkness of the cloud stood out in stark contrast, with curling edges and a density that made it almost appear to be solid. 34

She had no recollection of driving through it. She repeated that it was "crawling, sort of curling black stuff," and "like smoke" with "finger tendrils." Then she recalled being painfully examined, perhaps on a ship.

In November 1988 Elton then had nighttime experience of "dream" in which he was outside and a very large, boiling black cloud" rolled over him.

Son David underwent regression and recalled an experience outdoors at night where he saw a shadow on the ground moving quickly with a rustling sound like walking on leaves. It moved away from him and then came back quickly and hit him at the base of his spine with a tingling shock, leaving him feel strange and disconnected. Said David, "I'm looking at the thing... A blackness. A 'not.' Like a 'not-there.'... Like a moving oil puddle on the ground... And it's moving, but changing, too. Not much, just the edges, not very stable. And it's gone quick."35

The black "not-there" may have been Djinn.

Djinn also appear in the forms of black animals and mysterious creatures. Various witnesses in Turner's account periodically see darting black forms, like black rats or rabbits, in their peripheral vision.

Reptilians

In November 1988, Turner and Elton experienced missing time after hearing a series of clicking noises. In January 1989, Turner regressed her husband to recover memories of what transpired during the missing time. He recalled a bright light shining through diagonal vent in the air, as though the very air in the room had been ripped. He saw a light at the foot of the bed and a clawed, webbed hand that reached to grab his ankle. The clawed, webbed hand belonged to a reptilian.

Miscellaneous effects

Other effects experienced by the abductees also are associated with Djinn, such as blue lights and glows, and beds that vibrate and shake. The air shimmers like heat waves prior to manifestations. Balls of light even as large as basketballs enter rooms and act as though they have intelligence, or are being manipulated intelligently. There are strange clicking sounds and loud noises like rumbling trains.

Bruises, marks and punctures appear on bodies without any known cause. Abductees usually associate these with medical examinations done aboard ships — but Djinn also are capable of marking and wounding bodies as well.

James, David's friend, had a dream-like experience in which a beautiful blonde woman approached him in a sexual manner and then shape shifted into an ugly and inhuman form that was dark and slimy with wart-like bumps. This is a common description of Djinn who have intimate relations with humans. In Djinn lore, they must not ever be surprised, or their human partner is likely to see them in their true, hideous form instead of in their disguises as an attractive human.

One description of an encounter reminded me of one of my Djinn cases, involving a woman in Florida who had visitations from basketball-sized orbs of light, Shadow People, and dark mysterious creatures. One particularly terrifying guise was that of a thin, tall young man with string black hair on his head and all over the exposed parts of his body. He was dressed in tattered clothing, including trousers that were torn off at the knees. He wore large military-style boots. The "man" would leer at her with a saw-toothed grin. Although much of his appearance seemed comical, the overall effect was terrifying.

James, the friend of David, had a younger brother, Lucas, who was at their parents' home one night when he had a "dream" of 20 to 30 humanoid forms invading the house. He fought and struggled with some of them. He said they "acted like they were trying to appear human, but they weren't doing a very good job of it. They were wearing ragged clothes and stuff, like hillbillies in old overalls and hats."³⁶

Turner's book hit a nerve with others, who wrote to her about their own similar experiences. Some of these appeared in her second book, *Taken* (1994); several experiencers reported numerous encounters with Shadow People.

Polly" described seeing black shadows throughout her life. In her late twenties,

she was living in a cabin in the Blue Ridge Mountains. One night there was "very loud stomping, like several men in work boots, suddenly began on our front porch after no sound of approach. We saw shadowy figures accompanying the very loud stomping. But I don't remember it stop ping. I recollect we went to sleep in the midst of all this commotion, which of course makes no sense if we were lying only a few yards from prowlers. We awoke in the morning, remembered the stomping and shadowy figures, and went outside to hunt for footprints but found none."

In early 1987, Polly was sick in bed and had bedroom visitations by two black-robed figures:

They had large slanted, glowing, lemon-yellow eyes with no pupils, just like lights," she said. "The black-robed figures were about four feet tall. They were identical except that one was a little lighter, like charcoal gray instead of black. When they moved they did every thing simultaneously to each other. They glided through my son's toy box when they left the lower parts of their robes just went right through it. ... "Someone asked me if I had asked the figures what they wanted. My response was NO! I didn't want to give them any openers! My feeling was that they had come to take me permanently, and I devoted all my energy to rebuking them.³⁷

"Lisa," another abductee, also reported a life-long pattern of Shadow People visits:

The sounds of things walking through the house have been going on since I was small. The shadows [dimly discernible figures] happened more in my later life, from twenty years old on. Like I said, they do it [appear] right in front of me."³⁸

She also recalled episodes of missing time in childhood, and unexplained lights

outside and inside the house. The outside lights were large and white yellow, while the lights that came inside were red and white and bounced around the house. Grays did not appear until years later.

"Beth" thought the shadow figures that visited her when she was young might be ghosts, although that explanation did not suffice. Once Beth woke up during the night and found a humanoid figure sitting on her bed. He was not in black, however, but in a tight white outfit. Later, she could not recall the being's face, or anything it said. When she told her mother about the visitations, her mother had no explanation, but said that she sometimes she awakened at night to hear Beth talking in her room, as though someone else was with her. She was unable to get up to check on Beth because of a strange paralysis.

Legacy

Turner died on January 10, 1996 at age 48, the victim of an unusual cancer. During her own research, she and her husband uncovered memories of military involvement in their abduction encounters. They were instrumental in drawing attention to the "MILABS," or "military abductions," phenomenon, in which victims feel that military and government organizations were orchestrating abductions and working in collusion with the alien abductors.

They may be right.

Finding the truth

How do we evaluate abduction experiences, which, even though they share common characteristics, are still subjective to each experiencer? Abductees often struggle to make sense of their experiences and find a meaningful purpose to them. Some are convinced that, even though their experiences are frightening, they have a positive purpose, and the aliens involved are helping humanity. However, the wide-scale changes and help that are promised are always just

about to happen, but never do.

I am certainly open to benevolent entities striving to wake up humanity, but if this is how they go about it, by terrifying people, it is a most puzzling approach. Assuming there are helpful entities carrying out programs and activities, deceitful ones can still insinuate themselves. If they manage to convince people that their bad experiences are really good medicine, then they remain unchallenged.

Mahmoud observed:

The djinn that must be responsible for this ET phenomenon must definitely have human handlers, said Mahmoud. I believe UFOs are modeled specifically for the western world, because the public are more receptive to the idea and notion of this superior race or beings coming from outer space and coming to save the world. If you look at mainstream media and the science programs like on history channel and so on, you can see a common theme here.

I believe this is part of the program by people at high levels to get us into that mind frame. By so doing the population does not realize that it opens itself up to these "abductions." With time they will only get worse and worse and encounters will be more violent as the Djinn won't have to hide.

Chapter 6

Men in Black

SHADOW PEOPLE HAVE a remarkable similarity to Men in Black (MIB). MIB resemble Shadow People with features filled in: faces, hair, clothing, and so on. MIB have a long history of interacting with humans in negative, harmful ways. They, too, are footprints of the Djinn.

MIB are most frequently associated with UFO experiences, but their presence in human-entity contacts extends throughout the supernatural and paranormal. MIB have interacted with humans in different guises:

Fairies

Fairies are adept shape-shifters and mischief makers. When wronged, they are dangerous. In Celtic lore, one shape taken by fairies is as a tall man in black clothing, who passes unnoticed among humans, and looks for opportunities to cause trouble. The man in black overlaps with lore about the Devil. During the witchcraft trials of the Inquisition, witches were linked to fairies, and it was believed that fairies taught them infernal magic and supernatural skills.

The Devil

Folklorists associate the MIB with the Devil, who is often described as a man in black. This is said to be a disguise; Christianity portrays the true form of the Devil as ugly, deformed and reptilian, a human torso and limbs with reptilian head,

clawed hands and feet, a tail, scales, and horns, and often an enormous phallus, which could easily be a Djinn form.

Like the Djinn, the Devil is a shape-shifter, preferring to appear as a tall black man or a tall man dressed in black. Henri Boguet, a 16th-17th century jurist in witch trials during the Inquisition, stated:

.. ..whenever he (the Devil) assumes the form of a man, he is, however, always black, as all witches bear witness. And for my part I hold that there are two principle reasons for this first, that he who is the Father and Ruler of darkness may not be able to disguise himself so well that he may not always be known for what he is; secondly, as proof that his study is only to do evil; for evil, as Pythagoras said, is symbolized by black.

The Devil also appears in a multitude of animal shapes, most commonly a black dog, black cat, serpent and goat, all strongly associated with Djinn.

In many of the Inquisition witchcraft trials that took place in the 16th through early 18th centuries, accused victims gave accounts of being approached by the Devil in the form of a tall man in black, or in the form of a black animal, usually a dog or cat. In the famous trials of the North Berwick witches of Scotland in 1590-91, accused witch Agnes Sampson said:

The devil was clad in a black gown with a black hat upon his head... His face was terrible, his nose like the beak of an eagle, great burning eye, his hands and legs were hairy, with claws upon his hands, and felt like the griffin.²

Other accused witches in the North Berwick trials also described the devil as a tall man in black.

In the Lancashire Witches trials of 1612 and 1633, one accused, Margaret Johnson, said the devil was dressed in a black suit tied with silk points. And in the Salem witch trials in Massachusetts in 1692-93, the Caribbean servant woman who helped to ignite the hysteria, Tituba, claimed that there was a coven of witches led by a tall, white-haired man dressed all in black.

Some accused witches, such as Isobel Gowdie in Scotland in 1662, said the Devil was dressed in gray as well as black. In the Mora Witches trials in Sweden in 1669, the accused described the Devil as "a little old man, in a Krey coat, with red and blue stockings, with exceedingly long garters. He had a high-crowned hat, with bands of many-colored linen enfolded about it"-a description that resembles more a fairy than a devil.

Some accused witches, such as the North Berwick coven, noted that rites with the devil and his demons were lit with candles that burned with a blue flame. Blue lights and glows are associated with Shadow People, the Djinn, ITs and UFOs.

The Protestant reformer of the 16th century, Martin Luther, had a visit from a dark, robed monk with bird claw hands, according to lore. He assumed it to be the Devil. The story was told by Georgius Godelmannus, a law student at the University of Wittenberg, Germany in 1591, who heard the story from several of his teachers. The mystery monk knocked hard upon the door of Luther, who invited him in. The monk asked him questions about papist errors and other theological matters. Luther grew impatient and said his time was being wasted, and the monk should consult a Bible for answers. At that point, he noticed that the monk's hands were like bird claws and suspected he was dealing with the Devil. Luther showed the monk a passage in Genesis that said, "The seed of the woman shall bruise the head of the serpent." Exposed, the Devil went into a rage, threw about Luther's ink and writing materials, and fled, leaving behind him a stench that lasted for days.

Werewolves and vampires

Accounts of human who shape-shift into wolves date to antiquity, and reached a peak in the 16th and 17th centuries during the Inquisition, when were wolves were linked to witchcraft and the Devil. Some confessed werewolves said they got their shape-shifting power from a tall man in black (sometimes identified specifically as the Devil) in return for homage or their souls.

In 1603, 13-year-old Jean Grenier was arrested in Landers, southern France, on charges of killing animals and people as a werewolf. Grenier, a disheveled youth with prominent canine teeth and long, claw-like fingernails, told the court during

his trial that when he was 11 years old, a neighbor boy took him into the forest and introduced him to the Lord of the Forest, a tall dark man dressed entirely in black and riding a black horse. On a second meeting with the mysterious figure, the boys entered into a pact to become the lord's bond slaves. He marked them on their thighs with a stiletto-like knife. In exchange, they were given a magical wolf pelt and a magical ointment that enabled them to transform into wolves. From then on, the Lord of the Forest would command them to go out and hunt, and sometimes accompanied them, often in the form of a leopard. In 1521, two men in Besoncon, France, were charged with witchcraft and cannibalism that included blood vampirism. One of the men, Pierre Burgot, said that 19 years earlier, he had been a shepherd in Poligny, France. A storm scattered all of his sheep, and he went out in search of them. Three black horsemen rode up to him. One promised him that all his troubles would be over, and he would have money and his lost sheep if he would pledge to serve their master. He agreed. He learned that the man in black who spoke to him was the servant of the Devil. Burgot pledged to become his servant as well. He did so for two years and then went back to church. He was soon approached by the second man on trial, Michael Verdun, who enticed him to renew his pact. Burgot was taken to a ceremony where he was given a magical ointment that transformed him into a bloodthirsty werewolf.

Vampires have been heavily glamorized in film and fiction for several decades, and no longer have much resemblance to the horrible creatures encountered by our ancestors. In European lore and elsewhere, the returning dead seek out the living to suck out their blood and life force, and in addition folklore is full of nonhuman entities that have the same appetites. Vampires described centuries ago were ghastly figures looking like corpses swollen with blood. It is interesting that since Bram Stoker published *Dracula* in 1897, vampires in pop culture have been stereotyped as tall men in black capes, modeled on Stoker's Count Dracula.

Shadows are associated with vampirism. According to Muslim Gypsy lore in parts of southern Europe, vampires are the shadows of dead people.

Vampires overlap with werewolves, demons, incubi and succubi, poltergeists, and nightmare hags, which in turn overlap with Djinn. Vampirism also is associated

with bad luck, blighted or "blasted" crops, epidemics and plague. The Djinn also are associated with bringing disease and ill fortune on winds.

The UFO and ET connection

In modern times, the MIB have shifted to outer space, which has replaced the grave and demonic beings as the Great Unknown harboring all kinds of terror. The MIB are not lords of the forest who ride black horses, or black dressed men peddling magical secrets in exchange for souls. They are Shadow People who lurk on the fringes of sleep. In waking consciousness, they are intimidating "government officials" who drive around in black cars and target certain persons for harassment. Some persons who have seen UFOs, have been abducted by ETs, or have experienced missing time are visited by MIB, who discourage them from talking about their experiences, or pursuing more research. MIB have been reported all over the world since the advent of the modern "flying saucer" era in 1947.

The first documented UFO-related MIB case took place in June 1947, three days before pilot Kenneth Arnold saw flying disks around Mount Rainier, Washington and coined the term "flying saucer." The incident took place near Maury Island (now part of Vashon Island) in Puget Sound, Washington state. Harold Dahl was out on his boat with his son, his dog, and another man, looking for drifting logs. Dahl's attention was drawn by aerial activity. Looking up, he saw six doughnut-shaped objects flying in the sky. He could even see portholes in the objects. One appeared to be in mechanical difficulty. It began throwing off debris, some of which struck the boat, killing the dog and injuring Dahl's son.

The next morning, a man in a black suit appeared on Dahl's doorstep and invited him to breakfast. Dahl assumed him to be a government representative, and, trustingly, obliged. The man said little until they arrived at a restaurant and sat down to eat. He then related everything that had happened to Dahl the day before, in detail. Dahl was astonished - how could he possibly know, for Dahl had not disclosed the incident to anyone. The MIB warned Dahl not to talk about it, and Dahl got the impression his family might be harmed if he did.

After they parted and he gave the matter some thought, Dahl decided the man was a crank and talked, anyway. Investigations were mounted; one involved Kenneth Arnold. Two Army intelligence officers dispatched died before they could investigate when their plane mysteriously crashed on take-off from Tacoma, Washington. An anonymous informant told the press the plane had been sabotaged. Arnold had serious mechanical issues with his plane. Were the Men in Black at work to discourage the process of discovery?

The Maury Island incident got the attention of Albert K. Bender, a Bridgeport, Connecticut, factory clerk who had founded the International Flying Saucer Bureau (IFSB). In 1953, Bender became another victim of MIB. Through his research he believed he discovered the secret of where ETs come from and why they visit Earth. He wrote a letter about this to a friend. Soon after he mailed the letter, three men dressed in black suits and hats visited him and warned him not to reveal his information. One possessed his letter. After the visit, Bender became ill in the same way as Djinn victims. He acted "lobotomized," in the words of one friend, and suffered severe headaches, which he said were controlled by "them." He said that if he thought about revealing his information, he was hit with a debilitating headache. Bender experienced poltergeist phenomena and telephone interferences, and felt watched. He deteriorated to a near nervous breakdown, dropped all of his UFO-related pursuits and shut down his bureau.

Bender was contacted by Gray Barker, a West Virginia ufologist who wrote about him in his book *They Knew Too Much About Flying Saucers* (1956). Barker attempted to cajole information from Bender, but Bender answered most questions with "I can't answer that." He did acknowledge that the three men were dressed alike. "They were pretty rough with me," he told Bender. "Two men did all the talking, and the other kept watching me all the time they were here. He didn't take his eyes off me." The MIB wrote down the serial numbers of Bender's tape recorders. They already had the names and addresses of Bender's friends and UFO contacts.

Bender had been publishing a newsletter called *Space Review*, which he ended along with the bureau, the final issue, November 1953, contained a statement about the bureau closure. The MIB had dictated and edited the copy:

LATE BULLETIN. A source, which the IFSB considers very

reliable, has informed us that the investigation of the flying saucer mystery and the solution is approaching its final stages. This same source to whom we had preferred data, which had come into our possession, suggested that it was not the proper method and time to publish this data in *Space Review*...

STATEMENT OF IMPORTANCE. The mystery of the flying saucers is no longer a mystery. The source is already known, but any information about this is being withheld by orders from a higher source. We would like to print the full story in *Space Review*, but because of the nature of the information we are very sorry that we have been advised in the negative.

We advise those engaged in saucer work to please be very cautious.³

Barker was known to be a prankster, and some have suggested that he "invented" the entire MIB phenomenon. However, the phenomenon is widespread, and has links to similar figures throughout history. The clothing may change, but the intimidating behavior does not.

Characteristics

Reports of MIB have common ground. Facial features and complexions are often Asian or Mediterranean. The MIB usually dress in dark or black clothing, which is either amazingly wrinkle-free or very disheveled - one extreme or the other. They drive about in large, dark or black cars. Some have unusual hair growth, as though their head has been shaved and the hair has grown back unevenly, or has been glued on their heads like poorly made dolls. MIB sometimes have odd ways of walking, as though intoxicated, or with a gliding or rocking motion as though their hips were on swivel joints. Some in America have been seen wearing the Great Seal of the United States in their lapels. MIB visits are unannounced at home or work. They often show up three times. Sometimes they appear after a sighting, but before the individual has reported it to authorities or a UFO-related organization. They often pass themselves off as representatives of the

government or military intelligence. Curiously, they seem to know quite a bit of personal data about the people they visit. They have a sinister, even threatening demeanor, and they intimidate, threaten and harass their victims. They may tell a witness that he or she did not see what they thought they did, or that bad things will happen if they talk or persist in their research.

The voices of MIB also are unusual in extremes: monotones, singsongs and whines, as though they are mechanical. Sometimes their voices are eloquent in timbre.

MIBs and Mothman

Some MIB are not threatening; rather, their visits are more of a Trickster nature, such as the MIB who appeared during the Mothman wave. The wave, which lasted from mid-November 1966 to mid-December 1967, took place in the mid-Ohio River Valley and was centered around Point Pleasant, West Virginia. Mothman was a dark winged humanoid with glowing red eyes that suddenly began making appearances in the area. A great deal of UFO and ET contact activity took place during the wave, along with paranormal phenomena. John A. Keel went to investigate, and wrote his famous book, *The Mothman Prophecies*.

In *The Vengeful Djinn* I discuss Djinn as an explanation for Mothman, who had the characteristics of a curious Djinn. The entity followed and spied on people, but never overtly attacked anyone. In early sightings, it seemed confused and even frightened. It is possible that an intermediational portal suddenly sprang open for a time and this entity fell through, along with a host of other phenomena. It was stuck on our side until it found its way back.

In January 1967, at the peak of the Mothman wave, journalist Mary Hyre of the Athens, Ohio *Messenger*, who was working with Keel to document the strange activity, was visited by a short MIB, "less than 5 feet tall and: wearing wearing shoes with enormously thick soles, a frequently reported characteristic." He had weird, hypnotic eyes and wore his black hair in a bowl cut. He fixated on Hyre's ballpoint pen. When she told him he could have it, he split into a cackling laugh and zoomed out the door.

Susan Sheppard, a medium, artist, author and researcher who now lives in Parkersburg, West Virginia, has had a number of MIB encounters, the first taking

place during the Mothman wave when she was in grade school. In the spring of 1967, Sheppard and a friend were playing on Shannon's Knob, West Union, which lies off Route 50 between Parkersburg and Clarksburg, UFO activity had been seen over the hill. Two men dressed in black and on foot came over the hill. One looked "normal." One looked Asian with dyed blond hair. There was, she told me, a sinister air about them. Susan and her friend hid behind a bush and watched them. The men measured the hill. After watching for a while, thinking they had not been seen, the girls ran home. Later odd circular markings on the ground were found on the knob.

The encounter seemed to "mark" the girls. As they got older, they both developed chronic, severe and debilitating headaches, which Sheppard associated with the MIB, noting that Bender had developed headaches as well.

Sheppard's work took her into the paranormal. She established and ran a ghost tour in Parkersburg, ranked number eight in the nation. She wrote books on paranormal topics, gave psychic readings, and created art. In particular, she was an expert on one of the key Mothman events, the alien Indrid Cold and his human contact, Woody Derenberger. Derenberger's story is a book in itself; in short, he met Cold when a craft came down out of the sky and forced him to stop his car. The occupant introduced himself as Indrid Cold, and thereafter initiated an involved relationship with Derenberger, who claimed to visit Cold's planet, Lanulos.

It seemed that every now and then, when Sheppard was well into adulthood, one or more MIB would pop up in her life, as though "they wanted to remind her that she was on their radar. This characteristic occurs in Djinn cases, too.

Once when her sister was staying at her home, two MIB knocked on the door. When her sister opened it, they asked for Susan. Her sister answered that she was sleeping. One of the MIB made an effort to peer into the house.

Sheppard also had occasional dreams about MIB coming to her door.

Around the time of the 35th anniversary of Mothman, Sheppard had several run-ins with a particular MIB over a period of about a year and a half. He was about 6 feet tall and looked part Asian with dark hair, about age 35. He always wore a long dark trench coat. He had not been seen around town before.

He first appeared at a bookstore where Sheppard was autographing her books.

He seemed fascinated by her books, and made disjointed comments: he was a Scorpio, and he assisted in brain surgeries in Parkersburg." He abruptly ended the conversation by saying, "I've got to go get my brother." He did not return.

The second time the MIB appeared was as a delivery man. Sheppard and her family ordered a pizza for delivery. When the doorbell rang, there was the MIB, pizza in hand. He said nothing, took the money and left. At that point, Sheppard just assumed that pizza delivery was his job, and it was a coincidence that her book fan delivered her pizza. Subsequent appearances made her wonder what was really going on.

The MIB next showed up on Sheppard's evening ghost tour, blending into the crowd and saying nothing to her. Then she saw him at the bookstore again. She walked in and there he was, standing up by the stacks and reading a book on the Dalai Lama. She glanced away and then looked back - and he was gone.

Around Thanksgiving, Sheppard, her daughter, and her then-husband attended a play, "A Christmas Carol," at a theater in town. After they settled into their seats, the seat next to Susan remained vacant for a time - until the MIB entered and sat in it. He did not seem at all surprised to see her. During the performance, he talked and laughed like a child, as though he had never seen a play before. At the end, he got up and made a speedy exit.

In his final appearance, the MIB attended an art auction in town where some of Sheppard's works were being sold. The MIB sat in the back, unnoticed by her until heated bidding began on one of her Halloween-themed pieces. One of her friends turned around to see who the persistent bidder was, and told Sheppard it was a striking-looking man. Looking back, Sheppard was astonished to see the MIB.

He won the auction, grabbed the art, and raced out the door without a word. She never saw him again. To this day, she still does not know exactly why the MIB - both the Mothman wave MIBs and her "personal" MIB — have showed up, and why they appear in such strange ways.

Was Susan "marked by her connection to Mothman and her paranormal interests and abilities? Most researchers who delve into the para normal, mysterious creatures and UFOs say they feel marked, too, as though they are being watched, tracked and sometimes targeted. I agree, and feel the same way myself. Once you are on the radar, once you have their attention and they know

you are pursuing them - whoever "they are you are indeed a target, and they like to periodically remind you that they are watching all the time, even when you think they have gone away. "They may play with you, irritate you, thwart you, harass you, even seriously harm you.

Explanations

Various possibilities have been put forward to explain MIB: mistaken impressions; imagination; hoaxes; ETs; time travelers (humans from the future); thought-forms created by humans; demons; real government officials; tricksters; and unknown entities. Surprisingly - or perhaps not - the Djinn are overlooked.

Natural explanations may account for some cases, but those aside, "When it comes to the Men in Black we are dealing with phenomena that are far, far stranger and much more terrifying than any government agent come to silence witnesses," said Nick Redfern, an investigator of all things strange.⁴ Redfern and other researchers posit that multiple explanations are behind the phenomenon. Author Jim Keith, in his book *Casebook on the Men in Black* (1997) suggests that MIB are part of an "evolving reality" that morphs and shape-shifts according to prevailing beliefs.

I, too, believe that multiple explanations apply to the paranormal. We search for black-and-white definitive answers, and find gray areas instead. Such morphing terrain is well-suited to the Djinn, who keep humans guessing and looking in all directions instead of straight at them. Hide in plain sight.

Chapter 7

The Watchers and Nephilim

STORIES OF INTERRACIAL breeding between humans and gods or other worldly beings exist in mythologies from ancient times. Gods and exalted beings of "royal blood," such as the Anunnaki of Mesopotamian lore and the Tuatha de Danaan of Irish Celtic fairy lore, were separate from humans but eventually intermingled with them. The Djinn are likely to be either responsible for, or participating in, such events. It cannot be said that the Djinn account for all human-otherworldly species breeding, but the Djinn are hidden among them, taking various guises to prevent humans from knowing their true identity.

The Watchers

Most interesting of all interbreeding stories is the account told in the Old Testament and non-canonical texts about the watchers, also called the Sons of God and the Grigori. They have been likened to fallen angels, but their true identity is probably Djinn. They cohabited with human women, created monstrous offspring called the Nephilim, and fell from God's grace. God's disgust was so great at the corruption that he sent the Flood to cleanse the planet.

There are only brief, and sometimes confusing, references to the Sons of God in the Bible. Job 38:7 mentions the "sons of God" shouting for joy when the morning stars sing. Genesis 6:1-4 tells of the sons of God admiring human

women, marrying them, and creating a race of giants.

The title "Son of God" also appears elsewhere in the Old Testament and in the New Testament and refers to an intimate relationship between God and his creatures. The title is given to the Chosen People (Exodus 4:22; Wisdom 18:33), to individual Israelites (Deuteronomy 14:1; Hosiah 2:1), to their leaders (Psalms 82:6). The title was applied to the Messiah (1 Chronicles 17:13; Psalms 2:7) and in the New Testament to Jesus (Mark 15:39; Luke 23:47; Matthew 21:37, 22:42-46 and 24:36) to denote his heavenly rank and status above all angels.

The term "Watcher," usually interpreted as an angel, appears in the Bible in the book of Daniel. King Nebuchadnezzar, referring to his dreams, mentions "watchers" and "holy ones" three times:

I saw in the visions of my head as I lay in bed, and behold, a watcher, a holy one, came down from heaven. (4:13)

The sentence is by the decree of the watchers, the decision by the word of the holy ones, to the end that the living may know that the most high rules the kingdom of men and gives it to whom he will, and sets over it the lowliest of men. (4:17)

And whereas the king saw a watcher, a holy one, coming down from heaven and saying "hew down the tree and destroy it but leave the stump of its roots in the earth"... (4:23)

In these references in Daniel, "watchers are not called angels, but "holy ones." The term "watcher" is translated from *ir*, to watch, or being watchful.

The Bible gives but a brief account of the Sons of God and their intermingling with humans, told in only four verses, Genesis 6:1-4. Below are two translations:

Version And it came to pass, when men began to multiply on the face of the earth, and daughters were born unto them, That the sons of God saw the daughters of men that they were fair; and they took them wives of all which they chose. And the Lord said, My spirit shall not always strive with man, for that he also is flesh: yet his days shall be an hundred and twenty years.

There were giants in the earth in those days; and also after that, when the sons of God came in unto the daughters of men, and they bare children to them, the same became mighty men which were of old, men of renown.

International Version

When human beings began to increase in number on the earth and daughters were born to them, The sons of God saw that the daughters of humans were beautiful, and they married any of them they chose.

Then the Lord said, "My Spirit will not contend with humans for ever, for they are mortal; their days will be a hundred and twenty years." The Nephilim were on the earth in those days - and also afterward — when the sons of God went to the daughters of humans and had children by them. They were the heroes of old, men of renown.

Here the Nephilim are not described as evil, but of good repute, heroes. There is some ambiguity as to whether or not they were already on the planet, or whether they were specifically created by the interspecies breeding. If they were already on the planet, then the implication is that they also mixed racially and perhaps took over all the offspring.

The book of Enoch

The ex-canonical book of Enoch tells a much fuller story of the watchers and Nephilim, and also describes the Watchers as both good and bad. The book of Enoch is an important text, describing not only the story of the Watchers and the Flood, but also providing detailed descriptions of angels and the organization of a multi-tiered heavenly realm. The book was excluded from

the Bible by the early Church Fathers, thus destroying its authority - and depriving subsequent generations of truth.

The book is named after Enoch, an Old Testament era patriarch who was taken to heaven by two angels on the orders of God. He was given a heavenly tour and intense instruction, and then was returned to Earth to disseminate the teachings. After finishing this task he was translated to heaven.

There are three known versions of the book of Enoch. Though excluded from the canon, it nonetheless had a significant influence on the development of doctrines in the New Testament.

Historical background

According to Genesis (5:18-24), Enoch was of the seventh generation from Adam in the long-lived lineage of patriarchs. His father, Jared, was 162 years old when he was born, and lived for another 800 years. Enoch fathered Methuselah at age 65, and lived another 300 years before translating directly to heaven. Genesis 5:24 says that "Enoch walked with God; and he was not, for God took him."

The book of Jubilees, a Jewish text from the 2nd century BCE, says that Enoch was conducted into the Garden of Eden in majesty and honor, and behold there he writes down the condemnation and judgment of the world."

The Enochian manuscripts were written by anonymous authors between the 2nd century BCE and 6th century CE (or much later according to some scholars) in Hebrew and possibly Aramaic; translations were made into Greek, Ethiopic and Slavonic. The writings carried great authority in their day. Tertullian, a Roman Christian theologian of the late 1st and early 2nd centuries CE, said the book was divinely inspired, and had either been preserved by Noah on the ark during the Flood, or had been reproduced by Noah through the inspiration of the Holy Spirit. Origen, a 2nd-century Christian philosopher, gave the same weight to the Enochian writings as he did to Psalms. St. Clement of Alexandria, a Greek theologian who converted to Christianity, and who died c. 215, referred to the chronicles as a sacred text.

The chronicles were declared apocryphal in the 4th century by St. Jerome, a father and doctor of the church. One of the chief objections to them was that they

portray a multi-layered heaven that contains hells populated by fallen angels - a concept contradictory to the heaven-above, hell-below model developed in Christianity.

St. Augustine, a doctor of the church and a contemporary of St. Jerome, said in his opus *The City of God* that certain scriptures such as the book of Enoch were declared apocryphal because their origins were obscure, the authors were not known, and their errors were many. He also considered Enoch to be too old to be of any value to Christianity. Augustine states:

We cannot deny that Enoch, the seventh from Adam, left some divine writings, for this is asserted by the Apostle Jude in his canonical epistle. But it is not without reason that these writings have no place in that canon of Scripture which was preserved in the temple of the Hebrew people by the diligence of successive priests for their antiquity brought them under suspicion, and it was impossible to ascertain whether these were his genuine writings, and they were not brought forward as genuine by the persons who were found to have carefully preserved the canonical books by a successive transmission.'

Thus kept out of the canon, along with the book of Jude, which quotes from it, the book of Enoch fell into obscurity for hundreds of years. Today the different manuscripts of the book are of continuing scholarly and theological interest around the world. New translations and numerous commentaries have been written.

Scholarly and esoteric interest in the book revived in Europe when three copies of what is now called 1 Enoch were discovered in 1773 by Scottish explorer James Bruce in Abyssinia (what is now Ethiopia). Bruce kept one and gave the other two to the *Librarie Bibliotheque* in Paris and the Bodleian Library in Oxford, England. The Bodleian copy was translated into English by Dr. Laurence, Archbishop of Cashel, and a former professor of Hebrew at Oxford. A second edition was published in 1883. The book was translated into German in 1838 and 1853, and

into Latin in 1840.

Occultists focused on the book's antiquity, authorship and symbolic meanings. Freemasons associated Enoch with the legendary Thoth of Hellenic Egypt, the god who taught mystical wisdom, magic, mathematics, writing and other skills to humanity, and with Hermes, the Greek god who is the patron of magic, messenger to the gods, psychopomp of souls and personification of universal wisdom. (These two deities formed a composite, Hermes Trismegistus, the legendary author of Neoplatonic, Christian and Kabbalistic writings that form the foundation of the Western occult tradition.)

Madame Helena P. Blavatsky, co-founder of The Theosophical Society, gave Enoch treatment in her greatest work, *The Secret Doctrine*, published in 1888. Blavatsky disputed the existence of Enoch as a single living man it would be like accepting Adam as the first one, she said. She translated *Enoichion*, or the Book of Enoch, as "inner eye" in Greek, and that it meant in esoteric terms "Seer of the Open Eye." In Hebrew, she said, the term means "initiator" and "instructor," and is a generic title. Thus, Enoch was a generic title borne by scores of persons in all times and ages around the world, she said. There was no translation of Enoch to heaven - the Biblical statement about God taking Enoch referred to the disappearance of sacred wisdom from humanity and its preservation by secret colleges of priests.

Blavatsky also said that the writings of Enoch were allegorical and symbolical copies of the original records, or the philosophy of every nation that preceded the Deluge. These were produced by the early Third Root Race before the Fall, and were handed down orally to the Fourth Root Race — the root races being part of Blavatsky's cosmogenesis as given to her by the Ascended Masters.

Enoch's story

Enoch, the son of Jared and seventh descendant of Adam and Eve, is 365 years old when he has his visionary experiences. One day he is sleeping on his couch when a great distress" comes over him, and two huge beings appear and lift him up into heaven. He learns that God has chosen him to be a scribe and a witness to the consequences of sin and the rewards of righteousness. He makes one or

more journeys to heaven - accounts vary - and has many visions. He is taken to the different levels of heaven and hell, learns the mysteries of the cosmos and the celestial realms, and sees the future, including the Flood, the end of the world and the Last Judgment. He is given a heavenly body of light and shown the books of knowledge.

After these revelations, Enoch is sent back to earth in order to pass on the teachings to his sons and others. God then takes Enoch back into heaven. In some accounts God transforms him into Metatron, giving him 365,000 eyes and 36 pairs of wings. One of his functions as Metatron is to be the scribe of heaven.

Versions of the book

1 Enoch, also called The Ethiopic Book of Enoch, is the oldest of the three Enochian books, and was authored between the 2nd century BCE and the 1st century CE. Scholars disagree as to whether it was originally written in Hebrew or Aramaic; it may have been composed in both. It is composite work created in Judea, predating the Dead Sea Scrolls found at Qumran. It was known to Jews, early Christians and Essenes. 1 Enoch was important in the early church, and was cited by numerous church fathers and philosophers, as well as the authors of other apocalyptic works, such as the Assumption of Moses, Testaments of the Twelve Patriarchs, 4 Ezra and 2 Baruch, as well as Jubilees. The oldest copies of 1 Enoch date only to the 15th century; earlier copies were lost or destroyed.

1 Enoch influenced the language and thought of the New Testament, such as the doctrines of the nature of the Messiah and Son of Man, eschatology, demonology and the messianic kingdom. In Ethiopian Christian theology, it shaped the ideas that Satan and his minions are equally responsible for the Fall, and that good angels are active in our defense. It opens with the story of the Watchers.

2 Enoch, also called The Slavonic Apocalypse of Enoch, is a text of mysterious origins. It probably dates to the late 1st century CE, although some scholars think it was written in the Middle Ages because it exists only in Slavonic. Most Slavonic manuscripts of this nature were translated from Greek, and no Greek text for 2 Enoch has been found. The Slavonic text exists in 20 manuscripts of varying lengths and completeness. The oldest of these manuscripts dates to the 14th

century.

2Enoch covers the events in the life of Enoch to the beginning of the Flood, and includes the story of the birth and ascension of Melchizedek. It describes Enoch's journey to the seven heavens, and description of the good and bad angels, and the punished and rewarded humans, found in various levels.

3Enoch is also called The Hebrew Apocalypse of Enoch, The Sefer Hekalot (The Book of the Palaces), and The Chapters of Rabbis Ishmael. It is written in Hebrew and it most probably dates to the 5th or 6th century CE, although some scholars place it much later in the 9th century and even as late as the 15th century. It is the most complex and significant of the three versions of The Book of Enoch, and is an important work in the body of Merkabah literature (early Hebrew mystical teachings).

3Enoch is attributed to Rabbi Ishmael and is an account of his journey into the highest heaven to the throne of God and revelations made to him by the great angel Metatron. Rabbi Ishmael was a historical figure, a famous Palestinian scholar who died in 132. His name was used by the unknown author(s) of 3Enoch to lend it authority.

The text has four main sections. The first section concerns Ishmael's ascension through the layers of heaven to the throne where he participates in the reciting of the Qedussah (a song of praise to God sung by angels). The second section reveals that Ishmael is Enoch and describes his translation. The third gives an elaborate description of the angelic hierarchies, the activities of the heavenly court of law and the performance of the Qedus sah. The fourth provides a tour of heaven.

Versions of the story of the Watchers

Of the three texts, 1 Enoch tells the story of the Watchers and their fall in the greatest detail. The Watchers, described as angels who are "the children of heaven," see the beautiful daughters of men and desire them. They decide to take them as wives. But their leader, Semyaza, expresses the fear that he alone will be held accountable for this great sin. The Watchers, who are 200 in number, swear an oath binding them all together. Their chiefs (called "chiefs of tens") who

serve under Semyaza are Arakeb, Rameel, Tamel, Ramel, Danel, Ezeqel, Baraqyal, Asel, Armaros, Batrel, Ananel, Zaqeel, Sasomasp weel, Kestarel, Turel, Yamayol and Arazyal.

The Watchers descend to earth and take the women. In exchange, they teach people secret arts such as magical medicine, incantations and knowledge of plants and herbs, things humans are not supposed to know, at least at this stage of their development. Azazel (in Islamic lore, an alternate name of Iblis] teaches the art of making weapons of war, jewelry and cosmetics, and dye making and alchemy. Amasras teaches plant lore and how to perform magic. Baraqiyal teaches astrology; Kokarerel teaches the zodiac; Tamel teaches about the stars; Asderel teaches about the moon and the deception of man.

There is a dark side to them. Many of them commit adultery against their new wives. Their offspring, the giant Nephilim, turn against the people, cannibalize them and drink their blood. Sin, corruption and oppression spread across the earth.

Horrified, the angels Michael, Surafel (Suriel/Uriel) and Gabriel petition God to take action, for the people on earth are suffering. God declares that he will wipe out the wicked and all life on earth in a great Flood. He instructs Raphael to bind Azazel hand and foot and to throw him into darkness. Raphael makes a hole in the desert, casts Azazel into it and covers him with sharp rocks. (Note: Here is one explanation for why the Djinn live beneath the ground.) God tells Gabriel to destroy the children of the Watchers. He tells Michael to inform Semyaza that they will die together with their wives and children in their defilement. Michael is to bind them for 70 generations beneath rocks until the Day of Judgment. They will then be led into the bottom of fire where they will be locked up in prison and in torment forever. All those who collaborated with the Watchers will be similarly punished.

Finally, Michael is to eradicate injustice from the face of the earth.

The Watchers call to the prophet Enoch for help, and he hears them in a dream vision. Upon awakening, he tells Azazel there will be no peace for him, for a grave judgment has come upon him. Enoch then speaks to all the watchers, who are frightened and full of fear and trembling. They beg him to write a prayer of forgiveness for them. Enoch records their prayers and petitions and then reads

them until he falls asleep. He has another dream vision in which he sees plagues. When he awakens, he goes to the watchers and reprimands them for their sins, and tells them their petitions will not be heard.

Enoch nonetheless tries to intercede on behalf of the Watchers but is refused by God. God says that their giant offspring shall be called evil spirits upon the earth, for they will dwell on the earth and in the earth. He tells Enoch to inform the Watchers that because they have rejected heaven they shall have no peace.

The text also uses the term Watchers to describe some of the holy angels.

In 2 Enoch, Enoch sees the "innumerable armies" of the watchers and Nephilim imprisoned in the fifth heaven, a hell within heaven. They are dejected and silent. Enoch urges them to sing a liturgy to God so that God will not be enraged against them "to the limit." They do so, singing in a piteous and touching way.

3Enoch describes the Watchers as holy angels. According to the text, four great princes called "Watchers and holy ones" (the terms used in Daniel) reside in the seventh heaven opposite the throne of glory facing God. They are called Watchers and holy ones because on the third day of judgment (after death), they sanctify the body and soul with lashes of fire (a reference to preparing the soul for God's presence).

Each Watcher has 70 names corresponding to the 70 languages of the world, and all of them are based on the name of God. Each name is written with a pen of flame on God's crown. Such sparks and lightning shoot forth from them that no angels, not even the seraphim, can look upon them.

The Watchers are charged with the praise of the Shekinah, the presence of God on Earth, and God does nothing without taking their counsel. They function as officers in the heavenly court and debate and close each case that comes up for judgment. They announce the verdicts, proclaim the sentences and sometimes come down to earth to carry out the sentences.

The Nephilim

The term "Nephilim" means "Gallen," those who have fallen" or "those who were cast down." The Nephilim sometimes are called the Sons of God, as are their

Watcher parents. Helel is their chief.

As mentioned earlier, Genesis 6:4 implies that the Nephilim were already present upon the earth when the Sons of God began their relations with mortal women: "The Nephilim were upon the earth in those days, and also afterward, when the sons of God came into the daughters of men, and they bore children to them. These were the mighty men that were of old, the men of renown."

The book of Enoch, however, casts them as flesh-eating, blood-drinking, corrupt monsters. According to 1Enoch:

And the women became pregnant and gave birth to great giants whose heights were 300 cubits. These (giants) consumed the produce of all the people until the people detested feeding them. So the giants turned against the (people) in order to eat them. And they began to sin against birds, wild beasts, reptiles and fish. And their flesh was devoured the one by the other, and they drank blood. And then the earth brought an accusation against the oppressors. (7:3-7)

A cubit is roughly the equivalent of 18 inches, which would make the Nephilim about 5400 inches, or 450 feet tall. If we assume 12 feet as an average height for a story of a building, then the Nephilim were the equivalent of a 37.5-story building. This is an astonishing, seemingly impossible size for a physical being on the planet, rendering everything around them, including many trees, the size of Lilliputian figures. How they could manage to lift a foot against gravity is a puzzle.

Their size is not astonishing, however, if they were not physical to begin with, but in a shape-shifted, ultradimensional form. As half-Djinn, the Nephilim would have possessed full powers of interdimensional movement and shape-shifting. Recall that ancient Arabian tales of genies who are released from lamps and bottles come out in smoke and mist that materializes into forms of all sizes, including huge ones.

With giants such as these loose and out of control, no wonder the angels and God himself became alarmed. When the angels tell God that the giants have filled the entire earth with blood and oppression, God declares that he will punish these transgressions with complete destruction in the Flood. In 1 Enoch he tells Gabriel:

Proceed against the bastards and the reprobates and the children of adultery; and destroy the children of adultery and expel the children of the Watchers from among the people and send them against one another (so that) they may be destroyed in the fight, for length of days have they not. They will beg you everything for their fathers on behalf of themselves because they hope to live an eternal life. (They hope) that each one of them will live a period of 500 years. (10-9-11)

God chooses the patriarch Noah to repopulate the world after the destruction of the Flood. In the Old Testament, the story of Noah is told in Genesis 5:28-9:28. He is son of Lamech, grandson of Methuselah and the great-grandson of Enoch. At his birth, Lamech predicts, "Out of the ground which the Lord has cursed this one shall bring us relief from our work and the toil of our hands." (5:28-29)

Once again, however, the Bible omits interesting details that are told in ex-canonical texts. Noah is peculiar and different from birth, not like other humans. Is he part angel? Some "ancient alien" theorists today posit that Noah was of extraterrestrial blood. There were some in the ancient world who thought that Noah was of Watcher descent - a suspicion harbored by his own father, Lamech, according to the Dead Sea Scrolls (see below).

1 Enoch describes the unusual appearance of Noah, and how he speaks from birth:

And his body was white as snow and as red as a rose; the hair of his head as white as wool and his *den dema* "afro" hair) beautiful; and as for his eyes when he opened them the whole house glowed like the sun- (rather) the whole house glowed even more exceedingly. And when he arose from the hands of the midwife, he

opened his mouth and spoke to the lord with righteousness. (106:2-4)

This seemingly supernatural son alarms Lamech, who flees to his own father, Methuselah, and says:

I have begotten a strange son. He is not like an ordinary human being, but he looks like the children of the angels of heaven to me; his form is different, and he is not like us. His eyes are like the rays of the sun, and his face is glorious. It does not seem to me that he is of me but of angels; and I fear that a wondrous phenomenon may take place upon the earth in his days. (106:5-6)

Lamech asks Methuselah to find out the truth about his son from Methuselah's father, Enoch, who is in heaven. Enoch tells how the Watchers (referred to here as angels) have sinned by marrying women and begetting children with them. He foretells a great destruction upon the Earth and a flood for one year. Noah, he says, has been born righteous and shall be left upon the earth, and his three sons and their wives shall spread his seed and multiply. Enoch says he knows this because the Lord has revealed it to him and he has read it in the books of heaven.

Noah is 600 years old by the time of the Flood. He has led a righteous and blameless life. God tells Noah about the coming Flood (in *midrashim* - interpretations and teachings on the Hebrew Bible - the archangel Uriel is the messenger). God instructs Noah to build an ark of gopher wood. He and his family are to take aboard pairs of all living creatures and ride out the Flood. When the waters subside they will renew and repopulate the earth. According to 1Enoch, angels were involved in the building of the ark.

The waters rain for 40 days and 40 nights, and seven months pass before the waters abate enough for the ark to come to rest on the mountainous terrain of Ararat. God tells Noah to start anew and pledges that he will never again destroy every living creature. Noah becomes the first tiller (farmer). He dies at the age of

950. The descendants of his three sons, Shem, Ham and Japheth, spread abroad on the earth.

Evidently not all the Nephilim perish in the Flood, however, for a later reference in the Old Testament book of Numbers refers to the Anakim, thought to be the mixed-raced sons of the Nephilim:

We saw the Nephilim there the descendants of Anak
come from the Nephilim). We seemed like grasshoppers
in our own eyes, and we looked the same to them.
(13:33)

The Anakim (the name means "long-necked" or tall) lived south of Palestine, near Hebron. Israel sent 12 spies - including Joshua — into Canaan to explore the Promised Land. They returned with terrifying stories of the Anakim, whom the Israelites took to be descendants of the Nephilim. The Anakim were eventually expelled from Hebron and the hills (Joshua 15:14), but a small number of them retreated to Gaza, Gath and Ashod (Joshua 11:22).

That still may not have been the last of the Anakim/Nephilim. The book of Samuel describes Philistine giants, who some scholars believe were the descendants of the Anakim. One of the giants plots to kill David, the king of the Israelites (2Samuel 21:15-22), and was killed himself before he could do so. There followed a war with the Philistines at Gath, and battles between the Israelites and mutant giants ensued:

And there was again war at Gath, where there was a man of
great stature, who had six fingers on each hand, and six toes
on each foot, twenty-four in number, and he also was
descended from the giants. And when he taunted Israel,
Jonathan the son of Shimei, David's brother, struck him down.
(2Samuel:20-21)

David's famous fight with the Philistine giant Goliath is told in 1Samuel 17. Goliath challenged the Israelites to send one of their men for a one-to-one fight to the

death; the losers would become the servants of the victors. Goliath stood more than 9 feet tall and was a formidable armored figure:

And there came out from the camp of the Philistines a champion named Goliath of Gath, whose height was six cubits and a span. He had a helmet of bronze on his head, and he was armed with a coat of mail, and the weight of the coat was five thousand shekels of bronze. And he had bronze armor on his legs, and a javelin of bronze slung between his shoulders. The shaft of his spear was like a weaver's beam, and his spear's head weighed six hundred shekels of iron. And his shield-bearer went before him. (1 Samuel 17:4-7)

The Israelites were afraid because of the man's sheer size, and they fled in sight of him. Goliath issued his challenge every day for 40 days without response. Finally David heard it answered. David was but a youth, probably in his teens, and Goliath laughed at him. David slung a stone at the giant's forehead and killed him, and then cut off his head with his sword. (1 Samuel 17:41-51)

Djinn or angels?

The story of the watchers makes a great deal of sense when they are defined as Djinn rather than angels. They have a lustful eye for humans and some of them decide to cut a deal - a hallmark behavior of Djinn. Teaching humans useful skills and knowledge they are not supposed to possess makes humans that much more valuable as instruments to be manipulated. Knowing magical arts, for example, leads to spirit conjuring, and a way for Djinn to act out in different ways. Also, the more humans know, the more they covet power and material gain, which makes them easy to influence.

In 2Enoch, God rejects Enoch's plea for mercy, saying the Watchers will be considered evil spirits and will dwell on the Earth and *in the Earth* (my emphasis). The Djinn roam the Earth, moving in and out of their own dimension. They favor underground dwellings such as caves and tunnels, rocky landscapes and remote

areas. In 1 Enoch, Raphael makes a hole in the desert, casts Azazel into it and covers him with sharp rocks.

The Nephilim also have Djinn traits. They are imposing and monstrous in size. They seize power and spread corruption. They consume flesh and drink blood. Some types of Djinn are flesh eaters - notably the *ghul*- and others consume the life force and essence of the blood, and are propitiated in magical rites by blood sacrifice.

Why are the watchers described as angels? The Bible does not call them angels, but "Sons of God." The Djinn, as one of God's creations, could be called by such a term. The book of Enoch, written much later, may have used acceptable terminology to suit the times and the potential audience.

The Dead Sea Scrolls, known as the Qumran texts, offer some other details about the watchers, the Nephilim, and Noah. The texts comprise a body of Jewish-Christian texts and fragments first discovered in caves near the Dead Sea at Qumran in 1947. The literature reflects the messianic movement in Palestine. Written in Hebrew and Aramaic, the texts span the 1st century BCE to the 1st century CE, and contain rich lore of angels and magic. Some of them survive only in fragments; we can only wonder what information was lost.

The first scrolls were discovered in a cave in 1947 by Bedouin boys. In 1954 an important cache was discovered in a fourth cave. For years scholars and governments struggled over access to the scrolls; few were translated and published prior to 1991.

According to some scholars, the Qumran texts are associated with the Essenes. This idea is dismissed by others, who view them as representative of a messianic elite who practiced withdrawal into the wilderness to purify themselves to meet angels and prepare for the apocalyptic battle with evil. The texts also shed light on the beginnings of Christian liturgy.

The texts include messianic and visionary recitals, prophecies; biblical interpretations; testaments; laws; hymns, songs and mysteries (reminiscent of literature in the Merkabah and Kabbalah); and procedures for divination and magic.

The Watchers

The Testament of Amran (Q543, 545-548), which exists only in several fragments and manuscripts, concerns the Watchers. In Manuscript B Fragment 1, the anonymous author describes a dream vision in which two Watchers are fighting over him. He asks, "Who are you that you are thus empowered over me?" They tell him that they have been empowered to rule over all mankind and they ask him to choose which of them he would prefer as a ruler. One of them has a terrifying appearance, like a serpent wearing a dark cloak of many colors. He has a "visage like a viper."

Fragment 2 identifies Belial as one of the Watchers. He has three titles, Belial, Prince of Darkness and King of Evil, and he is empowered over all darkness and his every way and every work are darkness.

Fragment 3 mentions the "Sons of Light" who are ruled by a being who identifies himself with three names: Michael, Prince of Light and King of Righteousness.

Another fragment says that all the Sons of Darkness will be destroyed because of their foolishness and evil and the Sons of Light will have eternal joy and rejoicing for all peace and Truth will be made Light.

The Nephilim

The Enochic Book of Giants (4Q532) tells that two Nephilim sons of Semyaza (the leader of the Watchers), named Ahya and Ohya, have a shared dream vision in which they visit a world garden and see 200 trees being cut down by angels. They don't understand the dream and so they take it to the Nephilim council. The council appoints one of their members, Mahawai, to consult Enoch in paradise and ask him what it means. Mahawai rises up into the air like the whirlwinds and flies with the help of his hands like an eagle until he reaches Enoch. Enoch says that the 200 trees symbolize the 200 Watchers who are going to be destroyed in the coming Flood.

Later in the text Mahawai transforms into a bird again to make another journey. He flies too close to the Sun and is threatened with incineration. He is saved by

Enoch whose voice comes down from heaven to tell him to turn back and not die prematurely.

Noah

The Genesis Apocryphon (1QapGen), also called the Apocalypse of Lamech, tells that Lamech suspects that his wife, Bat-Enosh, had sexual relations with one of the Watchers — but Bat-Enosh swears that Noah is Lamech's child.

Djinn associations

Like the book of Enoch, the fragments of the Testament of Amran contain references that fit the Djinn. The Watchers who fight over the anonymous author for control of him say they have the power to rule all of humanity. Manipulating and controlling people are Djinn behaviors. One of the Watchers has the appearance of a serpent, a favorite form taken by Djinn.

In Judeo-Christian demonology, Belial (also Beliar) is one of the heavy weight demons; St. Paul considered him to be chief of demons. Belial's name may be derived from the Hebrew term *beli ya'al*, which means "without worth." In Hebrew lore, Belial was the next angel created after Lucifer, and was partly of the order of angels and partly of the order of virtues. He was evil from the start, being one of the first to revolt against God. After his fall from heaven, he became the personification of lies and evil. Belial's name is sometimes a synonym for Satan or the Antichrist. In the Old Testament, the "sons of Belial" refers to worthlessness and recklessness.

Before Belial was absorbed into demonology, however, he was known as a Djinn. In the Testament of Solomon, Belial is among the Djinn summoned by King Solomon to work as a slave to build the Temple of Jerusalem. Solomon also uses his magic ring to force Belial to dance for him.

The Nephilim's dream vision of the trees being cut down has a most interesting connection to modern-day Djinn activities. Djinn sometimes live in trees, according to lore. In several of my cases of Djinn hauntings where Djinn are attached to the land, the resident Djinn have erupted in anger if humans cut down

"their" trees. Their responses have included intensified poltergeist activity, accidents and mishaps, nocturnal physical assaults, visits by Shadow People, and unpleasant dreams.

In June 2011, a news report came out of Surat, India about a Djinn tree that was spared being cut down, even though its branches obstructed traffic in a busy crossroad. A small Djinn temple was at the base of the tree. Locals said that 14 years earlier, plans were made to cut the tree down, but authorities were opposed on the grounds that the Djinn objected. No one wished to risk the Djinn's wrath if the tree was removed. The same issues were raised in 2011, and once again, the tree was spared.

Similarly, the fairies, who have a close connection to Djinn, take revenge on humans who cut down their favored trees. Folklorist Katherine Briggs relates the story of a cottager in Ireland who tried to cut a branch of a sacred elder tree that was hanging over a saint's well. This angered the fairies. Twice they stopped the man by sending him a telepathic image that his house was burning. He raced home, only to find the alarms were false. On the third try, he succeeded in cutting the branch. But when he arrived home, he found his cottage burned to the ground. The fairies had their revenge.?

A more chilling story concerns the consequences of cutting down two fairy thorns to clear land for a hospital in Kiltinagh, Ireland, around 1920. All the locals knew the fairy thorns were haunted by fairies, and would not touch the trees out of fear of suffering their wrath. Finally a man from out of town undertook the task and cut down the trees. When the locals warned him of the consequences, he angrily retorted, "I'll be back, never fear, and to hell with your bloody fairies!" Thus he committed two crimes against the fairies: cutting down their trees, and insulting them. That night, the man suffered a stroke and was crippled. He died within a year. He did return to the town as he predicted — but in a coffin. As for the hospital, it was built, but it never opened.

Perhaps the keen attachment of Djinn and fairies to trees has less to do with care for things in nature, and more to do with an ancient echo of the fate of the Watchers.

Mixed identities

Once again, we are faced with ambiguity and uncertainty, a blurring of identities. If the gods of one religion can become the demons of another, as we have seen elsewhere in this book, then the same applies to the Djinn: they can acquire other labels as well. In addition, the fluidity of the Djinn in their shape-shifting ability makes them particularly hard to pin down. They slide around disguised and unnoticed.

Chapter 8

Gods, Annunaki, Angels and Archons

EVEN WITHOUT INTERBREEDING, the Djinn may have taken shape-shifted forms to appear as gods and demigods, for the purpose of manipulating human beings and perhaps even for the sheer enjoyment of wielding power. They have favored exotic forms and hybrid humanoid forms. In the past, the blue glows around them might have been altered - or perceived -as blueskin, an attribute of many gods and higher beings. The animal-headed humanoid gods of Egypt and the strange animal-humanoid gods of Mesopotamia would suit the Djinn. These forms possessed mystery and power and inspired awe and obedience. The ancient customs of blood sacrifices to the gods would have been favored by Djinn as well.

When cultures collide, the gods of one are demonized by the other, which is how a mother fertility goddess like Astaroth of the Phoenicians became a demon to the Hebrews and then to the Christians. For Djinn, it's just a matter of shifting roles. Astaroth is still active, but is no longer sought to bring babies - instead Astaroth is a cause of demonic interference and possession.

Moloch (also turned into a demon by the Hebrews) is an interesting figure that lends itself to Djinn interpretation. Moloch was a Sun god to the Ammonites. He may be been associated with Baal, a great fertility and agricultural god of Canaan, a land conquered by the Israelites. King Solomon was said to have built a temple to Moloch.

To the Ammonites, Moloch personified the detrimental effects of the sun's rays. He also was the bringer of plagues (a role also played by Djinn). He was depicted as a bull-headed man with long arms sitting on a brass throne. Huge bronze statues of him were erected in his honor, and he was worshiped with human blood sacrifice rites for protection from disaster. The victims were thrown into fires built in hollow bellies of the bronze statue.

Moloch was called "the prince of the valley of tears," a reference to Topheth in the Valley of Hinnom, where the sacrificial rites were said to take place. King Jeremiah defiled Topheth, and the sacrificial practices declined.

The Hebrews called Moloch "the abomination of the Ammonites" (1 Kings 11:7). The ancient Greeks associated Moloch with Cronos, the god of time who devoured his own children in order to prevent them from challenging his rule.

Today, Moloch is relegated to demonic realms and is associated with conspiracies such as the Illuminati and New World Order.

The Anunnaki

Humans were not created by God in his image, but by an extraterrestrial race called the Anunnaki in their image, according to Zecharia Sitchin, whose reinterpretation of ancient Sumerian mythology and texts spanned decades and created a worldwide following. The Anunnaki are involved in manipulating human genetics, and are believed by many to be the perpetrators of the ET abductions.

Sitchin's work was inspired by a childhood interest in the Nephilim (Nefilim is his spelling). He wondered who they were, and why they were called giants when their name meant "those who have come down to Earth from the heavens." His controversial multi-volume body of work, called *The Earth Chronicles*, is a major force of the ancient astronauts theory. Sitchin's own Global Theory holds that all humans sprang from the ET gods, and all cultures and mythologies are related; the Bible and its creation story were preceded by Sumerian accounts that tell a different story.

Sitchin says the Anunnaki, advanced humanoid beings on the planet Nibiru (associated with the Babylonian god Marduk), came to Earth about 450,000 years ago in search of gold, which they needed for their technology to protect their thinning atmosphere. Nibiru has been advanced as the elusive "Planet X" astronomers have thought to belong to our solar system. The orbit of Nibiru is long and elliptical, and makes a circuit around the sun every 3600 years. Sitchin says that about 500 million years after the formation of the solar system, Nibiru collided with the planet Tiamat, located between Mars and Jupiter, causing the catastrophic breakup of Tiamat. The debris formed Earth and the asteroids.

Coming to Earth, the Anunnaki inhabited the planet. They found a primitive species, early humankind, and decided to upgrade it by mixing in their own genes in order to create a race of slaves. The genetic engineering was led by Enki, and the first result, the Adam," was a product akin to the modern-day "test tube baby." The Anunnaki were responsible for the cradle of civilization in Mesopotamia, beginning with the Sumerian culture. The Sumerians considered the Anunnaki to be gods, but only the rank-and file of the race who settled the Earth. There were 300 of them initially, the Igigi, who landed in the Persian Gulf.

The Annunaki were the Nephilim, and the Nephilim were the *elohim* referred to in the Bible. Elohim is the plural of El, a name for Yahweh that denotes God's androgynous nature. Elohim implies a plurality of forces and is used in Genesis in conjunction with the act of creation. In Genesis 1:26, God (*Elohim*) decides to create man:

Then God said, "Let us make man in our image, in our likeness, and let them rule over the fish of the sea and the birds of the air, over the livestock, over all the carth, and over all the creatures that move along the ground."

However, it is not God speaking but the Anunnaki, according to Sitchin.

The Anunnaki, as the Nephilim, were called the People of the *Shem*. The traditional translation of *shem* is name, hence the Biblical reference to the Nephilim being heroes and people of reknown. Sitchin translates *shem* as rocket ships, maintaining that the Nephilim had the power of space travel in crafts.

As for the Flood, Enki tipped off Noah and told him how to build the ark.

Sitchin, who died in 2010, predicted the return of Nibiru, which is still inhabited by the Anunnaki, though he had no time frame. Then the Anunnaki "will once again come and go between their planet and our planet."

Others contend that the Anunnaki never went away and are still here, intervening with us via the abduction program.

Sitchin's considerations did not extend to the Djinn, although they were well absorbed into the demonologies and mythologies of ancient Mesopotamia. Other

scholars have criticized his translations of ancient texts. At the very least, his work corroborates the involvement of intelligent beings from elsewhere in the creation and evolution of humankind.

The Anunnaki, who have no defined appearance, fit the profile of Djinn. They hold humans in low regard, as useful labor and a source of sexual pleasure. They have no great interest in advancing the human race, but in feeding it just enough to continue its usefulness.

Angels

According to the Qur'an, in the beginning there were angels and Djinn. The Djinn had access to heaven to fraternize with the angels. After the Djinn were cast out by God, some of them still could eavesdrop on angels to learn valuable information which they then fed to prophets and fortune tellers. If the Djinn can shape-shift as they please, and if they take forms identified as demons, might they also mimic the forms of angels? St. Paul said that Satan could disguise himself as an angel of light (2Corinthians 11:14). Why not the Djinn?

Also, were there Djinn in the ancient world who became known as angels later on? Some curious connections between Djinn and angels exist.

In modern popular culture, angels are seen as all good, the exalted messengers and protectors who mediate between humans and God. They have become increasingly sanitized over the centuries. Today's images of pretty, smiling winged humanoids and glowing cherubic baby faces bear little resemblance to the angels known by our ancestors in Biblical times. In those days, angels were fierce and capable of punishment as well as reward. They were not hand-holders, but agents of justice and keepers of the holy order. The appearance of an angel often invoked fear and trembling.

Judaic angel lore was influenced by Zoroastrianism, to which part of the Jewish population was exposed during the Babylonian captivity in the 7th century BCE. In pre-exilic times angels belonged to popular rather than prophetic Judaic religion, but after the exile angels sprang into prominence and played crucial roles in visionary experiences such as those described by Isaiah, Ezekiel, Zechariah, Daniel and Enoch.

During the Babylonian captivity, a complete system of angels, both good and bad,

was developed; it shares many parallels with Zoroastrian concepts. Heaven is composed of different levels, above which rests Yahweh on his throne. The heavens below him are filled with a great multitude of angels who do his bidding, and who have specific duties to keep the universe organized and functioning. Many angelic duties overlap or even conflict among angels, with different angels or order of angels performing the same tasks. In between angels and man are hosts of demons (some probably derived from Djinn).

Talmudic times saw the developments of angelology and demonology, both complex and both containing entities and beliefs inherited from cultures throughout the Mediterranean: Egyptian, Graeco-Roman and Gnostic, in addition to Babylonian. Magical and mystical practices for dealing with these entities focused on the power of names. Magical practices sought to borrow power from entities in order to protect against others, or to effect some action in the world. Mystical practices, such as in the Merkabah tradition and later the Kabbalah, also employed names of power to interact with angels and demons. The angels of the Merkabah – especially those closest to God — are powerful, remote beings often hostile to humans and some stand as barriers between man and God.

In the Merkabah, some angels, like the Djinn, have mixed feelings about the human race, and, like the Djinn, are punished for speaking their minds. When God contemplates creating man, he first creates a company of angels and asks their advice. The angels oppose the creation of man, which displeases God, and he destroys them by burning them. He creates a second company of angels who also oppose the idea, and he destroys them as well. A third company of angels agrees to the creation of man.

After mankind becomes corrupted by the watchers and Nephilim and God destroys everything with the Flood, the angels remind him of their original advice: "Lord of the Universe, did not the first company of angels speak aright?" God replies that he has promised to carry and sustain man (and thus Noah repopulates the Earth).

Similarly, angels oppose God's delivery of the Law to Moses and the passing of cosmic secrets to Adam in the Sefer Raziel (the Book of Raziel), but they are unsuccessful on both accounts. In 3Enoch, they object unsuccessfully to Rabbi Ishmael (the purported author of the text) entering the heights of heaven and participating in the angels' devotional rites.

Clearly, some angels have tried to post a "Keep Out" sign to humans knocking on heavenly doors.

The angelic hierarchies

We perceive angels as being organized in a hierarchy of powers and responsibilities. In the worldview of the ancients, the microcosm of Earth reflects the macrocosm of heaven. Our social and government structures have counterparts in the celestial realms.

The nine-tiered hierarchy popular in angel lore today is not the only hierarchy conceived. In earlier times, there were many hierarchies, the products of visionary experiences. In some of the hierarchies, there were 10 or 12 levels, not nine. The nine-tiered hierarchy was conceived by Pseudo Dionysius, also known as Dionysius the Areopagite, an anonymous Greek writer of the 5th or 6th century.

In the hierarchy, the lowest ranks - the angels and the archangels - have the most to do with human affairs. As the orders ascend, the angels become more remote, even falling beyond human perception. They become more concerned with big-scale cosmic affairs.

Are all the angels in the hierarchy angels, or were some originally other beings? The two highest orders in the Pseudo-Dionysian hierarchy, the cherubim and seraphim, have mysterious origins. *Cherubim* In the Pseudo-Dionysian hierarchy of angels, the cherubim (kerubim) are the second highest to God. The etymology of the name "cherub" (singular) is uncertain. The Hebrew term "kerub," which means either "fullness of knowledge" or "one who intercedes," is thought to be derived from the Akkadian term "kari-bu," a winged guardian being of Assyria. The kari-bu has the body of a sphinx or bull and the head of a human. In ancient Assyria these beings guarded entrances to buildings and temples. The cherubim of the Israelites correspond to the sphinxes of the ancient Near East, serving as both guardian and throne.

Did the cherubim evolve from the animal-human guardian of Assyria? This hybrid form would be characteristic of Djinn.

Cherubim are mentioned 91 times in the Hebrew Bible. They also are described in Revelation in the New Testament. *The cherubim are not specifically called angels.* They make their first appearance in the Bible in Genesis 3:22. After the

fall of Adam and Eve, God drives the couple out of Eden and places cherubim and a flashing, turning sword at the east entrance, guarding the way to the Tree of Life. The cherubim are like bouncers - they will make certain that Adam and Eve stay out of Paradise.

In Exodus 25:10-22, God gives Moses instructions for building the Ark of the Covenant, a gilded wooden chest that bears the mercy seat of God. The chest has two guardian cherubim made of hammered gold on its two ends:

The cherubim shall spread out their wings above, overshadowing the mercy seat with their wings, their faces one to another; toward the mercy seat shall the faces of the cherubim be. (25:20)

The mercy seat, from which God speaks to Israel, is placed on the top of the ark, which functions like a modern-day real-time Electronic Voice Phenomena device.

King Solomon built the Temple of Jerusalem to house the Ark of the Covenant, and he enslaved the Djinn to do the labor. He had statuaries of cherubim placed strategically around the temple.

1 Kings 6:23-35 describes two gilded olivewood cherubim ten cubits (about 15 feet) high that are placed in the inner sanctuary. Each wing spans five cubits (about 7.5 feet), and they are spaced so that their wing tips touch the walls on each side and each other in the middle. The inner wings form the throne seat for the invisible deity. Carved and gilded figures of cherubim are placed in the inner and outer rooms. The doorposts to the entrance of the nave are carved with cherubim, palm trees and open flowers, all of which are gilded. The Ark of the Covenant is placed beneath the wings of the two large cherubim.

According to 2Chronicles 3:13-14, the Solomonic cherubim stand on their feet facing the nave, giving the impression that they are sphinx-like in form and are on their two back legs instead of on all fours. There is no throne formed by them.

In magical rituals, Djinn can be invoked for protection. Did Solomon use them to guard the Temple?

In Ezekiel 1:4-28, the cherubim are carriers of the throne God. They have an unusual form: living creatures with four faces and four wings. Ezekiel is by the

river Chebar when he has a vision of a great cloud flashing fire, and a fire gleaming like bronze in the middle. The four living creatures each have the faces of a man, an ox, a lion and an eagle. They have four wings, two of which touch the other creatures and two of which cover the body. They stand on straight legs that end in calf's feet. They are like burnished bronze. They have beside them four wheels with spokes that seem like wheels within wheels and gleam like chrysolite. The creatures and wheels move in any direction simultaneously without turning, and with flashes of lightning and sounds of thunder. Over their heads is a **firmament** shining like crystal. Above that, there is a throne like sapphire bearing the likeness of a human form like gleaming bronze and enclosed by fire: this is the glory of the Lord, who speaks to Ezekiel. In Ezekiel 10:1 - 22, Ezekiel sees the cherubim again on a journey to heaven, and he gives the same description of them. They seem to have human hands under their wings. The cherubim appear before he is lifted up to the east gate of **heaven**.

Revelation 4:6-8 describes the four living creatures seen by Ezekiel, but with six wings instead of four. They are "full of eyes all around and within," and they ceaselessly sing, "Holy, holy, holy is the Lord God Almighty, who was and is to come!" They are not named as cherubim or angels, however, but only as "four living creatures."

In 3Enoch the cherubim are under the rule of Kerubiel, who beautifies them and sings their praises. The Shekinah, the presence of God on Earth, rests upon their backs and illuminates their faces. Their hands are under their wings and their feet are covered by their wings; they have **horns of glory** upon their heads. They are surrounded by pillars of fire and sapphire stones. They enfold each other in their wings and sing constantly songs of praise and glory to God.

In other lore, the cherubim are the voice of divine wisdom, possessing a deep insight into God's secrets. They enlighten the lower levels of angels. They emanate holiness through the universe in **order to ensure the success** of universal truths. They personify the winds.

By the 4th-6th centuries, the cherubim are established in the ranks of angels. The Testament of Adam states they are second in rank. They stand before God and reverence his throne, keep the seals, and sing the hourly "holy, holy, holy."

Different chiefs of the cherubim are named in various texts: Ophaniel, Rikbiel,

Cherubiel, Raphael, Gabriel, Zophiel and also Satan before his fall.

As we have seen earlier, the Djinn are capable of being religious, and singing the praises of God would not be foreign to the pious. More interesting to the Djinn-cherubim connection are the hybrid forms, the formidable nature, and the personification of the winds. Are the Djinn in the mix of cherubic origins?

Unfortunately, the cherubim have been stripped of much of their power in modern concepts of angels. Cherubs are cute, pudgy, baby-faced angels, an evolution from the non-angel *putti* of Renaissance Christian art. The *putti* were painted alongside angels, often as part of an entourage for Christ.

They were inspired by Eros, the Roman god of love, and by *erotes*, Roman funerary winged boys.

Seraphim

The highest rank of angels in the Pseudo-Dionysian hierarchy, the seraphim, also has mysterious origins. The seraphim are related to fire and serpents, both characteristics of Djinn. They are usually beyond the perception of human beings.

The name "seraphim" is thought to be derived from the Hebrew verb *saraf*, which means to "burn," "incinerate" or "destroy," and probably refers to the ability of seraphim to destroy by burning. The seraphim may have evolved from the uracus, the gold serpent (specifically a cobra) worn by Egyptian pharaohs on their foreheads. Uraei without wings and with two or four wings were depicted in iconography throughout the Near East. They protected by spitting their poison, or fire. The seraphim who became angels in lore perhaps originally had serpent forms with human characteristics.

In the Hebrew Bible, the term *saraf* is applied to fiery serpents. Numbers 21:6-8 refers to fiery serpents sent by the Lord to bite and kill sinning Israelites. After Moses prays for forgiveness, he is instructed to set a fiery serpent atop a pole. Whoever is bitten by it, when he looks upon it, will live. Moses makes a bronze serpent. Deuteronomy 8:15 refers to the "fiery serpents" and scorpions in the land of Egypt.

The prophet Isaiah described more human-like seraphim in a vision. (Isaiah 6:2-3) He sees the Lord on his throne with six-winged seraphim standing above him.

Two wings cover the face and two the feet - probably to protect them from the intense brilliance of the Lord - and the other two wings are used for flying. The seraphim call out to each other, "Holy, holy, holy is the Lord of hosts; and the whole earth is full of his glory." One seraph takes a burning coal and touches it to Isaiah's lips, proclaiming that his guilt is taken away and his sin forgiven.

According to 3Enoch there are four seraphim who correspond to the four winds of the world. Each has six wings which correspond to the six days of creation; each wing is as big as the fullness of a heaven. Each has 16 faces, four facing in each direction, and each face is like the rising sun, the light of which is so bright that even other high-ranking angels, including the cherubim, cannot look upon it.

The text goes on to say that the seraphim are so named because they burn the tablets of Satan. Every day Satan sits down with Sammael, prince of Rome and Dubbiel, prince of Persia, to write down the sins of Israel on tablets. Satan gives the tablets to the seraphim to take to God so that God will destroy Israel. But the seraphim know that God does not wish to do so, and so they take the tablets and burn them.

The Kabbalistic text Sefer Yetzirah (Book of Creation) says seraphim are the highest order of angels, and they exist in the Universe of Beriyah, where Binah, which is represented by fire, dominates. Beriyah is the world of the Throne that Isaiah sees in his vision. Some Kabbalists call the seraphim Powers, Forces or Potentials rather than angels.

Seraphim are mentioned in Jewish literature and ex-canonical texts, sometimes without specific description, but as part of the high heavenly host. According to the Testament of Adam, the seraphim stand before God and serve his inner chamber, and, like the cherubim, sing the hourly "holy, holy, holy." 2Enoch describes them as having four faces and six wings. 3Enoch says there are four seraphim, corresponding to the four winds of the world.

Seraphim are not mentioned by name in the New Testament, but Jesus does acknowledge the wisdom of the serpent in Matthew 10:16 when he tells his disciples to be as wise as serpents and harmless as doves.

Rulers of the seraphim are Seraphiel, Jahoel, Metatron, Michael and Satan prior to his fall from heaven.

Blurry identities

These are not the only examples of ambiguous angels. When I undertook an in-depth study of angelologies for my *Encyclopedia of Angels*, I found many conflicting descriptions of them. Depending on the author, many angels were described as both good and bad, capable of wearing one hat or the other. Their interactions with humans have changed over the centuries, perhaps due more to changes in our perceptions of them. The ancients considered them disciplinarians, messengers and intermediaries. The Victorians associated them with the same duties, as well as the custodians of death and guardians of graves. Several decades ago, angels evolved into all-good helpers and personal protectors.

Angels are undoubtedly all of those things. Like humans and other kinds of entities, they are mixed in their attitudes.

It is also possible that beings we identify as angels were not and are not originally angels. That does not automatically make them undesirable or bad. Some of these beings, like the cherubim and seraphim, may have been added to the ranks of angels by us. Others might be entities who wish their true identities to remain obscure - entities such as the Djinn.

Archons

One of the lesser explored interpretations of ETs, and especially the abducting ETs, is that they are archons, malevolent, inorganic but living beings who are manipulating humanity for their own purposes. This is an avenue worthy of more attention, for there are significant connections to the Djinn. They have numerous parallels and similarities. The Djinn are smokeless fire and the archons are inorganic, but their demeanor, intentions and activities mirror each other.

The archons are part of Gnostic philosophy, which competed with Christianity for a time and then lost ground as a heresy. Some of the major influences on Gnosticism were Persian and Babylonian mythologies where the Djinn were familiar participants.

According to author John Lamb Lash, the archons exist outside of space and

time, and came into being long before humans. They have no regard for humans but are envious of us, and have sought for millennia to over take us and turn us into subservient, soulless beings. They feed off soul energy, and have the capability of removing souls and imprisoning them in containers. They are engaged in genetic manipulation. They can take over human bodies and use them, and manipulate human thought. We do not realize who they really are - we see them as ETs.²

That description has been made of the Djinn. So, are the archons Djinn or vice versa? The evidence of Djinn presence is hard to ignore.

To better understand exactly who the archons are and what they are up to, we must take a look at Gnosticism and its intricate interweaving with angels, demons, and, by association, the Djinn.

The roots of Gnosticism

The term "gnosis" means "knowledge." Gnosticism refers to the restoration of the truth of humanity's situation of being cut off from its real nature and God. Gnosticism grew out of beliefs and practices contemporary with early Christianity, with older roots in the mythologies and philosophies of Egypt, Babylonia, Persia, and Greece.

Gnosticism arose in the Hellenic Middle East, particularly Alexandria, Egypt, which was an intellectual crossroads of cultures. It was propelled by philosophical debates on the presence and power of ignorance, evil and suffering on earth. The Gnostics were thoroughly familiar with the Scriptures of Christianity and Judaism, Greek philosophy, Hermeticism and probably the religions of the East.

Gnosticism was considered a heresy by Christians from the 2nd and 3rd centuries on, with some remnants surviving to the Middle Ages, and its followers were often demonized as sorcerers. Church Fathers wrote extensively on it, mostly to denounce it.

Contemporary interest in Gnosticism was rekindled in 1945 when a cache of Gnostic documents was discovered in Nag Hammadi in Egypt. It took more than 20 years for scholars to access, translate and begin to analyze them.

There is no organized, clear-cut statement of Gnostic beliefs. Its several strains

share a primary vision of the origin of humankind as inherently flawed by earthly elements, yet keeping a spark of divinity, a "touch of light" from its exalted origin, and thus a breath of hope.

Gnostic cosmology

Like the Platonists, the Gnostics viewed the cosmos as a series of 365 concentric spheres with the Father (God, the invisible Spirit) at the center. The spheres are called aeons, each with its own ruler also called an aeon, who is comparable to a high angel. The term "aeon" (*aion* in Greek) means "eternity" or "eternal realm." The aeons are imperishable emanations of God, the first created beings, and compare to seraphim in closeness to the Godhead. They can combine and subdivide and multiply themselves in a process called syzygy. Abraxas is chief among aeons. Sophia - the youngest aeon, who is "wisdom" and a feminine principle - rules the 30th aeon, the highest level of the Pleroma, the 30 aeons closest to earth and which form earth's celestial heavens. Before the angelic hierarchy of Pseudo-Dionysius was established, aeons were included in hierarchies of angels as a tenth order.

Sophia, through her own folly, falls to Earth and becomes impregnated by the Pleroma. She gives birth to an ignorant creature, the Demiurge. The other aeons modify the Demiurge and he in turn creates humanity. The Greeks called the Demiurge the "accursed god" and identified him with the God of the Old Testament.

Another version of this story says that Sophia desires to create a work without a consort. When she does so, a shadow is cast. The shadow is envious of the superior heaven. Thus the beginning (*arche*) of envy enters all the regions in chaos and becomes matter. This Demiurge has no spirit. It creates the visible world and withholds knowledge from humanity, beginning with the warning to Adam and Eve not to eat of the tree of knowledge of good and evil (Tree of Gnosis). When Sophia sees the resulting horror, she has compassion and breathes life into the world of matter.

Enter the archons

The chief story of the archons is told in one of the most important Nag Hammadi texts, the Apocryphon of John, said to be a vision given to the apostle John. There are three known versions of the text, which dates to at least 185 CE. Here Sophia is the third aeon of the fourth light. Without the consent of the Spirit she has son, the monstrous Ialdabaoth ("child, pass through to here"), who has the likeness of a lion-faced serpent. He is the first and chief archon.

Sophia is ashamed because Ialdabaoth is a being unlike her, but he has some of her power. She hides him in a cloud so other aeons will not see him. Ialdabaoth is arrogant, ignorant and impious, and does not obey the place from which he came. He creates his own world with 12 archons. Seven rule the heavens and five rule the underworld. The archons in turn create seven powers of themselves, who in turn create six angels each, until there are 365 in number.

Ialdabaoth has shape-shifting ability. He has 12 faces, so that when he goes among the seraphim, he can put a face before them. He shares their fire and becomes lord of them. He declares himself to be God and tells the angels, "I am a jealous God and there is no other God beside me." (IV, 20, 13:10).

Ialdabaoth gives his creatures no part of the power which he has inherited from his mother, and so he is able to rule over them. By the time Sophia reencounters Ialdabaoth, he is full of power in himself and has created the lower heavens and earth. He states he needs no help: "I have need of no one. I am God, and there is no other apart from me." Sophia cries out against him, "You are Wrong, Samael."

"Samael" means "the blind god." (Gnostics also associated Samael with the serpent in the Garden of Eden. The name also is associated with the "Dread God" of the Semites. In the Sama Veda, the third of the four Vedas in Hinduism, he is a storm god and travels in black clouds. Later Samael became an alternate name for Satan.) This passage is crucial to comprehending the Gnostics, who regarded blindness or ignorance as the seat of evil, not sin. Ignorance leads to pride, vanity, greed, ambition, and so on. From a psychological perspective, the Gnostics projected the evil in the human heart onto the archons, who were under Samael's control.

The archons abuse Sophia and she becomes blind. At length she understands that all this has happened because she separated herself from her consort. She repents, asking the Father to hear her prayer. The highest God hears her and

sends to Sophia redemption in the form of the Logos, who takes the form of Jesus. Jesus restores Sophia's sight with a touch and she begins the process that will bring redemption to all mankind. This reunification of Logos (masculine) and Eros (feminine) is another great Gnostic theme, which recurs when the creation story moves to the Garden of Eden.

The Gnostics considered the first man, Adam, to be an earlier and superior being to Ialdabaoth.

The Apochryphon says that the archons attempt to make a man in the image of God with their own powers, but their creation is lifeless until Sophia the Mother intervenes and appeals to God. God's intermediaries trick Ialdabaoth into breathing into man the power he inherited from Sophia. Adam then becomes superior to the seven archons and to Ialdabaoth himself. When the archons realize they gave their power to man, and that he is now more luminous, intelligent and powerful than they are, they immediately become jealous. They try to seize man's thoughts.

Ialdabaoth and his powers cast Adam down to the material world and imprison him in a body made of the four elements. The Father sends him a soul, Epinoia ("insight"), whom he calls Zoe ("life"). The soul is hidden from the jealous archons. The archons then take Adam to Paradise to deceive him, telling him to eat from the tree of life. They deliberately lead Adam astray to prevent him from reaching perfection.

So that Adam cannot perceive the truth, Ialdabaoth brings forgetfulness upon him and then creates another human being in the form of a woman. Epinoia influences them to eat of the Tree of Gnosis, and they become aware of their true being. Realizing his failure, Ialdabaoth curses man and expels them from the garden. Ialdabaoth desires Adam's wife and begets two sons, the righteous Eloim and the unrighteous Jave, whom men call Cain and Abel. He sets them over the four elements from which the material body of man has been made. Ialdabaoth also implants sexual passion in Adam, whose son is Seth. There are now two spirits in man, one divine and the other material. The former inspires him from his sleep and forgetfulness to Gnosis; the latter is the sexual instinct which serves the ends of Ialdabaoth with his counterfeit spirit.

The Apochryphon has different versions of the Flood and the Watchers.

Ialdabaoth repents and plans to send a flood, but Noah is alerted by the higher spiritual powers, and informs all the good sons of men. There is no ark floating upon the waters, but rather Noah and many other people" hide in a luminous cloud. Ialdabaoth then sends his angels to mortal women to entice them into polluted relationships. The angels take on the likeness of men and come with gifts of gold, silver and other enticing material things.

They are able to lead the people astray.

The Apochryphon says that when souls are born, those who allow the Spirit (of God) to descend upon them will not be led astray, but those who follow the counterfeit spirit of Ialdabaoth) descend into evil. After death, those who are under the influence of Ialdabaoth will be bound in chains and cast into forgetfulness until they acquire knowledge and are liberated.

Hierarchical switches and revelations with different names in different spheres pervade Gnosticism and vary from sect to sect. Thus, there is no one definitive myth of Gnosticism. Many Gnostics believed that prophecy was inspired by both aeons and Satan. They regarded Satan with ambivalence because he had so opposed the Old Testament God. The Gnostics' reputed sorcery arose from their ability to name and invoke various aeons and archons. There are spells and passwords by which the Gnostic is able to ascend through the aeons to the highest realms. These were secrets of initiation.

1

Traits and activities of the archons

The archons not only rule the heavens and the underworld, but also the nations on Earth. They are sometimes equated with aeons, archangels, princes, demons, Satan, and planetary deities. The term "archon" is Greek and means "high official" or "chief magistrate," and was used by the early Greeks as a designation for high human officials. The term appears as a designation for supernatural beings in the writings of the early Jews, early Christians, and Neoplatonics, as well as the Gnostics. Archons can be either good or evil, but more often the term is used for beings who are hostile or evil. In Jewish and Christianity writings, "archon" refers to the chief evil being, known as Satan, Mastema, Belial and the Devil. The

archons impede the progress of Adam's soul, and thus the souls of all his descendants.

The book of Enoch equates archons both with angelic princes and with Semyaza, the chief of the Watchers.

Another Nag Hammadi text, *The Hypostasis of the Archons* ("The Reality of the Rulers") is an anonymous Gnostic work that gives an esoteric interpretation of Genesis 1-6, which incorporates the reference to the Watchers. Its date of origin is unknown, but it was originally written in Greek, probably in Egypt. The document declares that archons are not imaginary, but are real. The archons display arrogance, cruelty, and base behavior. They are called the Rulers of Darkness and Rulers of Unrighteousness.

Ialdabaoth's jealousy of man is the origin of Envy. Envy engenders Death, and Death creates the offspring of Chaos (similar to the fallen angels). The lesson of the story is that when humanity discovers the Spirit of Truth, they will exist deathless. When Death is conquered, the archons (authorities) will come to an end as well, and angels will weep over their destruction. Humanity will become the Children of Light.

Who are the archons?

Iamblichus, one of the founders of Neoplatonism in the 3rd and early 4th centuries, said there were two types of archons, cosmic and material. Lash interprets the two types as fetal, or the abducting grays, and humanoid reptilian. They are soul predators, and they shape-shift to disguise themselves.

The nature of the archons and their history of deceit and manipulation of humanity conform to abducting ET behavior and a spectrum of Djinn activity against humans. Both archons and Djinn can displace mortal spirits within their own bodies and take them over in forms of possession. The ET abductee Karla Turner said she learned that ETs have the ability to remove souls into containers and put them into other bodies. In his book *Grey Aliens and the Harvesting of Souls* (2010), Nigel Kerner maintains that ETs are manipulating genetics to create their own souls to escape a hive reality that forms their existence. The question of human collusion in ET abductions has been raised by researchers, who maintain

that governments and militaries work with, or use, ETs in soul displacement for their own elitism agendas. *Imitators, not creators* Gnostic teachings emphasize that the archons are imitators, not creators. Even their very coming into existence was a form of imitation. As Lash explains, our own sun is believed to have been formed by a plasmic ejection from an explosion with the Orion Nebula. The matter forming the sun is flung away, and eventually forms the star and rings of matter that condense into the planets. In the Gnostic scenario interpreted by Lash, Sophia and the archons witness this explosion:

As the proto-planetary disk forms, the Archons are absorbed into it. They are inorganic beings whose physical composition matches the inorganic chemistry of the planets, apart from the Earth. As the disk develops, the chief Archon, the reptilian type called Salkas, Samael, or Yaldabaoth, witnesses its formation and erroneously assumes that he is the creator of the emergent system. It is as if the chief Archon sees himself mirrored in the emergent solar disk, and then takes that system as his product.)

Thus Yaldabaoth assumes he is the creator, when in fact his is only patterned by the flow of inorganic elements. He and the other archons fabricate planets, but they are only imitating the Pleroma. The *exsousia* or "authorities" that Yaldabaoth creates are imitations. Due to their own ignorance and arrogance, the archons continue to believe they are creators, when they are only mere imitators.

There is an interesting connection to make to the Djinn here, via a contact experience recorded by paleoanthropologist and author Hank Wesselman in his blog in 2010.⁴ Wesselman has had extensive experience as a "spiritwalker" exploring the liminal regions between our physical reality and the otherworldly realities of spirits and beings. He has had various contacts with Djinn.

Wesselman encountered the female Djinn in a shrine at the great mortuary temple of Medinat Habu near the Valley of the Kings in December 2009 and again on January 8, 2010. A mental conversation took place. The Djinn manifested first

as two eyeballs, and when Wesselman was unruffled by this appearance, it shape-shifted to "a smoky humanoid form that flickered at the edges, shifting back and forth from one vague shape to another in pastel hues of orange, yellows and greens, with deeper core areas of more brilliant light as its mood shifted in response to our dialogue."

The Djinn told Wessleman, "You humans are creators. We, the Jinn, can not create but we can mimic... We can imitate... and we can affect potential outcomes, but we cannot create... Few can perceive us anymore and fewer still can bind us to their will."

The Djinn said that her kind were not allowed by higher intelligences to interfere with humans on their paths, but there were some Djinn who did so anyway, usually younger Djinn and those who are adversaries. The "watchers" – who seem to be a type of cosmic disciplinarian - influence the younger Djinn to behave. The adversaries, evidently, operate on their own.

Asked if the adversaries were the archons, the Djinn said, "The archons are not true spirits. They are mind beings, mental entities many of who were created by humans as thought-forms. Many of these function as attachments... as mental parasites."

The archons, she said, feed on the attention that humans pay them through their belief systems, but they would cease to exist if people stopped believing in them. The ones you call the archons are those that we call the deceivers, and like us they are not creative. But they can mimic and they can take on forms in response to human belief systems."

The Djinn also said that Earth is visited by beings from other worlds, and that the deceivers are the ones responsible for abductions, because they want the creative power possessed by humans. The archons cannot be affected by the "watchers" – disciplinarians who enforce cosmic rules – because they live inside human minds.

Wesselman acknowledges in his blog that the conversation might have been influenced by his then-current readings interests, which included Gnosticism and the archons. Even taking that into consideration, it is still a remarkable exchange.

The parallels between Djinn and archons are significant. Both imitate and do not create. Both can attach to humans. Both are deceivers (though Wesselman's

Djinn made no admission to deception among her kind). Both exert mental influences on humans. Both feed off human energy. Both take multiple forms in response to human beliefs. Both (as well as fairies) can cause people to fall into a trance sleep, which in earlier days would have been called enchantment or bewitchment. We find all of these traits in the ET abduction scenario.

If the Djinn covet occupying this Earthly dimension, they would look for ways to acquire human creative power - and abduction, examination and observation would be part of that effort.

The ones behind the mask

An archon involvement in the ET abductions is a plausible scenario. Are they really Djinn in disguise or a separate entity? Perhaps the answer is, both.

Among all of the entities we have considered, the one that has a fit with all of them are the Djinn. Not all of the fits are exact, and some are more extensive than others - but an entity that wishes to remain hidden would not want to show its hand in any of its diversions.

Chapter 9

Black Death and Black Magic

IF THERE ARE hostile Djinn who want to retake Earth, one way to do it is to eliminate the rivals. The fastest way to do that is mass killings. If out-and out warfare is not possible, epidemics just might do the job.

The Black Death

From the 14th through early 18th centuries, the devastating Bubonic Plague ravaged Europe. Outbreaks of the plague were often preceded by unusual aerial activity and mysterious lights in the sky. In addition, a second bad omen heralded the coming of the plague: appearances by mysterious humanoids dressed in black, sometimes carrying scythes, brooms, and swords. At the time, people interpreted these figures as evil demons. In his book *The Gods of Eden* (1989, 1990), William Bramley makes a case that they might have been aliens. Another interpretation, one that makes more sense, is Djinn in the forms of Shadow People or Men in Black.

The Bubonic Plague, also called the Black Death, first hit Europe between 1347 and 1350, just as it was recovering from the losses of the Crusades. The Inquisition was just getting underway, but otherwise Europe was enjoying renewal.

The plague began in Asia and quickly spread westward. There actually were two forms of it. One, bubonic, was spread by fleas and rodents. It caused a swelling of the lymph nodes, fever and vomiting. If treated promptly and properly, victims had a chance to recover. The second type, pneumonic, was highly contagious, spread from person to person. Victims fell into rapid, shallow breathing with high fevers, vomiting and the coughing up of blood. This type was almost always fatal within days. Historians estimate that one-third to one-half of the European population died of the plague.

It wasn't long before people noticed a pattern to outbreaks. Unusual activity in the sky preceded the onset of plague by a few days to up to a year. The aerial activity included comets, meteors, bright, fiery lights and balls of light. Some may have been natural celestial phenomena; others were more mysterious, such as an object seen over Arabia in 1479 that looked more like a modern rocket ship, and a cluster of flying black balls seen over Basel, Switzerland in 1566.

Unusual aerial phenomena, including comets, have been interpreted as bad omens since ancient times. But the medieval Europeans saw a direct connection between bright lights in the sky and death on the ground. Some times when a long period fell between the aerial activity and the outbreak of the plague, the ominous black men made an appearance.

Bramley cites some interesting accounts. Just before Brandenburg, Germany was hit by the Black Death in 1559, the black men were seen out in fields. According to an account published in 1682:

In Brandenburg (in Germany) there appeared in 1559 horrible men, of whom at first fifteen and later on twelve were seen. The foremost had beside their posteriors little heads, and others fearful faces and long scythes, with which they cut at the oats, so that the swish could be heard at a great distance, but the oats remained standing. When a quantity of people came running out to see them, they went on with their mowing.¹

In Hungary in 1597, a horde of "black riders" was assumed to be a raiding party of Turks:

...in the year of Christ 1571 was seen at Cremnitz in the mountain towns of Hungary on Ascension Day in the evening to the great perturbation (disturbance) of all, when on the Schuelersberg there appeared so many black riders that the opinion was prevalent that the Turks were making a secret raid, but who rapidly disappeared

again, and there upon a raging plague broke out in the neighborhood.²

During these times, any black figure was called a demon or the devil, and so were the black plague harbingers. The "demons" were reported to knock on the doors of people, who then fell ill, sometimes fatally. Bramley notes that these black humanoids, carrying their scythes, brooms and swords, gave rise to the image of the Grim Reaper, a hooded figure with no face or a skeletal face, who harvests souls with his huge scythe.

Poison mists

There was yet another strange phenomenon associated with the Black Death: poisonous mists and fogs. Mysterious clouds of noxious air have been blamed for diseases since ancient times. In classical Greece and Rome, great bonfires were burned in attempts to purify the air of killing agents.

Toxic mists and fogs, sometimes carrying a great stench, were believed to be the carriers of the medieval plague through Europe and even China. Wherever the toxic clouds arose, the plague followed.

In 1680, this odd account was written:

That between Eisenberg and Dornberg thirty funeral biers (casket stands) all covered with black cloth were seen in broad daylight, among them on a bier a black man was standing with a white cross. When these had disappeared a great heat set in so that the people in this place could hardly stand it. But when the sun had set they perceived so sweet a perfume as if they were in a garden of roses.

By this time they were all plunged in perturbation. Whereupon the epidemic set in in Thuringia in many places. ³

It is likely that the figure of the "black man" was a Djinn.

In 1682, this account appeared in a newspaper in Eisleben, where the plague had taken toll:

In the cemetary (sic) of Eisleben on the 6th inst. [?] at night the following incident was noticed: When during the night the gravediggers were hard at work digging trenches, for on many days between eighty and ninety have died, they suddenly observed that the cemetary (sic) church, more especially the pulpit, was lighted up by bright sunshine. But on their going up to it so deep a darkness and black, thick fog came over the graveyard that they could hardly see one another, and which they took to be an evil omen. Thus day and night gruesome evil spirits are seen frightening the people, goblins grinning at them and pelting them, but also many white ghosts and spectres... 4

According to the article, dark mist or smoke was seen to rise from freshly expired corpses, and also from the houses where plague victims had died.

Dark and blue mists also were associated with deadly cholera outbreaks in England in the 19th century:

When cholera broke out on board Her Majesty's ship Britannia in the Black Sea in 1854, several officers and men asserted positively that, immediately prior to the outbreak, a curious dark mist swept up from the sea and passed over the ship. The mist had barely cleared the vessel when the first case of disease was announced. 5

Bramley posits that the European plague mists were actually poisonous gas aerosols emitted from the "brooms" and "scythes" of the black humanoids, who were aliens bent on killing off human population.

More likely, they were hostile Djinn, carrying on with their ancient grudge against

humanity. The black humanoids, as well as black animals, are favorite forms of the Djinn, as are dark mists and clouds, and blue lights and glows. The Djinn are capable of manifesting any phenomena they wish. They are also capable of wasting away energy and health.

These are not disconnected phenomena, but all parts of the same puzzle. If the Djinn, or at least a faction of them, are carrying out a terrorist warfare on humanity, they might well be responsible for the outbreaks of plague, the strange lights in the sky, and the dark humanoid figures that seeded the disease through the lands. In Middle Eastern lore, Djinn are associated with disease-carrying, noxious winds that sweep through the deserts. Could the same be responsible for the mists and fogs of plague-ridden Asia and Europe? The connection is hard to ignore.

The Vril

Bramley's suggestion that the "brooms," "swords" and "scythes" used by the black shadow men were really poison gas weapons brings to mind a science fiction novel written in 1871 by Sir Edward Bulwer-Lytton of England: *Vril: The Power of the Coming Race*. The story concerns a powerful subterranean master race called the Vril-ya, who harness an *electrical-like energy* called Vril that can be used for healing or for destruction and killing. The energy is dispersed through wands or staves, or sent out mentally.

The story may be fiction, but many novelists, especially of science fiction, have an uncanny ability to tap into alternate or parallel realities, as well as the future. The Vril-ya bear many similarities to the Djinn. They are taller than humans with dark skin comparable to Native Americans. Long ago they retreated into mines and subterranean caverns connected by tunnels to escape the Great Flood. They communicate telepathically, and have learned to harness great psychic powers and projection of will, including manipulation of the Vril. The Vril is an "all-permeating fluid" likened to electricity, magnetism and galvanism, the kind of force that seems to surround the Djinn, who have the ability to affect electricity and magnetism when interacting with humans. Though the Vril can be used for good, its destructive power is tremendous, and even Vril-ya children can destroy entire cities and kill other beings and animals. The Vril-ya also have wings, an

interesting feature, given the frequency of sightings of mysterious winged humanoids through the ages, including the most famous one of modern times, Mothman, who, as I have noted, is probably a Djinn.

Bulwer-Lytton's story concerns a wealthy adventurer who becomes trapped in a mine, sees a strange light and follows it deeper underground. He discovers the Vril-ya as well as other races of beings. The Vril-ya speak a language that sounds like Aryan or Indo-German. They consider human beings to be dangerous, and they have a plan to someday return to the surface of the earth, seize the lands, and exterminate humans. The adventurer meets a Vril-ya woman who falls in love with him, and flies him to an area in the mine where he can escape.

A superior race of tall beings in subterranean abodes... a plan to retake the earth... use of a powerful, destructive force with electrical properties... and the ability to fall in love with humans are all part of Djinn lore.

Bulwer-Lytton may not have known about the Djinn, or about the mysterious figures associated with the Black Death, or reptoids, but we can take his story and transpose it to a Djinn agenda. Is it possible that the Djinn tried to wipe out human beings by spreading the plague? It would be one way to take over the planet. They did not succeed, just as the archons, who were discussed in the previous chapter, did not succeed in their first attempts to undermine humanity.

There are many ways to destroy, however: campaigns of disease, corruption, psychological attacks – and magic. Magic requires the cooperation of corrupt or unwitting human beings themselves. Sorcerers since antiquity have called upon powerful spirits to help them accomplish their goals. The sorcerers of today may pass quietly unnoticed by many names, but they exist in all levels of society and can be found everywhere, including the abduction phenomenon.

The universal life force

In Bulwer-Lytton's story, the key ingredient to healing or destroying is manipulation of the fluidic Vril, a life force energy. Manipulation of the life force is evident in all of the negative entity interferences we have been discussing. It is diminished or drained to cause illness and death; it can be used to affect mental processes. The life force energy has electrical and magnetic properties, and it can be manipulated through technology, psychic forces and magic.

The universal life force is a vital force or energy which transcends time and space, permeates all things in the universe, and upon which all things depend for health and life. Its existence has been acknowledged universally since ancient times, and it is known by many different names. The Hindus call it prana the Polynesians and Hawaiians mana, the Chinese qi and the Japanese ki. Hippocrates called it the *Vis Medicatrix Naturae* and Galen, the ancient Greek physician who served Roman gladiators and soldiers, called it the *Pneuma*. It is called the *Telesma* in the Hermetic literature. The alchemist Robert Fludd referred to it as *spiritus* and the Kabbalists called it the astral light. Franz Anton Mesmer called it magnetic fluid, and Wilhelm Reich termed it the orgone energy. More recently, it has been referred to as bioenergy.

Regardless of name, the characteristics of the universal life force are the same. It can be controlled and manipulated for improved health, longevity, healing, and supernormal physical feats. It can also be depleted to cause illness and even death, and can be manipulated to affect mental and psychological states and processes, and open the door to possession. It is the latter where we must be concerned, for the entities who have hostile agendas toward us – whether they are called Djinn, demons, fairies, ETs, Shadow People, archons, or reptilians - know how to manipulate this force.

It is instructive to take a look at some of the concepts underlying the philosophies about the universal life force, so that we can gain a better perspective on the importance of it in terms of negative entity contact experiences.

Prana

A Sanskrit term, prana usually is translated as "life force," "vigor" or "vitality." The control of it plays an important role in Yoga, Hindu magic and healing. According to ancient Hindu teachings, prana is the divine power that acts in the Akasha, one of the basic elements of the universe. The universe itself is manufactured from the Akasha by the power of prana; before existence there was nonexistence, which was not void, but "prana." It is the soul of energy, the essence of all motion, force and power in all things.

Prana manifests in the motion of all celestial bodies, and in gravity, electricity and magnetism. It is part of all forms of life, from the lowest protoplasm to the most

highest. When a being or material substance reaches the end of its life cycle, it is resolved back into prana.

Prana is part of every inanimate object as a living force. *Prana permeates all forms of matter, but is not matter itself; it is often likened to electricity.* This is an important point, for electromagnetic forces are prominent in many entity encounters. Lights, glows, affects on devices and machinery, and reactions to human-generated electrical fields are prominent experiences. Prana circulates in the body like a form of subtle energy electricity. Recall that it is said about the Djinn that they possess people by entering the bloodstream-a carrier of the life force - and circulating throughout the body.

While prana is all-pervasive, it is more concentrated at the tops of mountains and near running water. It corresponds with concentrations of negative ions. Perhaps this is one reason why so many UFO waves and hot spots, and portals of entity activities, are found near mountains and large bodies of water.

According to yoga, the human body maintains a store of prana, which acts as the body's vital bio-motor. Prana is not breath, but it is manifested in breath, and it is related to Vayu, the element of air and motion. The personal prana is in constant touch with the infinite supply of universal prana. The chakras are focal points for transforming the universal pranic energy into the body via channels of subtle energy. The circulation of prana is highest in the morning, at noon and early evening, and is affected by the movements of the planets and stars. Healthy people have an excess of prana, while sick people are depleted in it. Prana is responsible for regeneration and the healing of wounds. It may be transferred from a healthy body to a sick body by a laying on of hands.

In Indian magic, prana is the energy source for all magical feats. Magicians use prana to energize the imagination and will, which are the keys to the Creative Mind Principle, the controlling instrument of genuine magic - another important consideration in relation to the apparent supernormal feats of entities.

They can master natural forces to do "magical things such as pass through solid matter, materialize and dematerialize, levitate, and fly.

Human adepts can learn how to do these things as well. Mystical masters of the East command the powers called *siddhis*. In Christianity, saints possess the same powers. All shamanic and magical traditions embrace the same abilities. The

average person can apply himself to learn them, but most people - the great masses - lack the awareness and discipline to do so. The entities know this, and it is to their advantage.

Qi

Qi, or chi, in Chinese metaphysics, medicine and martial arts, literally means "breath," "gas" or "ether;" it has never been clearly defined. Qi was developed as a metaphysical principle, as the source of vitality, harmony, creativity and moral courage, by various philosophers, among them Lao-Tzu (604-531 BCE), the legendary author of the *Tao Te Ching*, and Confucius (c. 551-479 BCE). Lao-Tzu conceived of qi as a dualistic principle, which evolved into the concept of yin and yang. Yin is the dark, the earth and the passive/wet/feminine principle, and yang is the light, the sun and the active/dry/masculine principle. From this dualistic concept arose the Five Elements theory of Chinese medicine, and the basis for the *I Ching* system of divination.

Yin and yang are in constant ebb and flow, and must be in balance for optimum health. Yang energy enters the body by flowing downward from the heavens, while the yin flows upward from the earth. They converge at a point in the lower belly called the *hara*, which is located about two inches below the navel and is deep within the body. The *hara* is like a stove or furnace where the life force can, in certain disciplines, be converted into spiritual energy, a process which creates physical heat.

Qi courses through the body in 12 meridians connected to the internal organs. All living things are in a constant energy exchange with qi. Illness results when the exchange is restricted, depleted or out of balance. If the exchange ceases, the organism dies. Qi is received through food, the breath and from the environment in general. It can be manipulated by acupuncture and acupressure.

Qi is harnessed in martial arts for extraordinary feats. For example, the famous Japanese feudal Ninja warriors commanded ki (qi) to make themselves invisible, walk on water and control the elements. The samurai warriors also were adept at using ki as a unifying force between the individual and the cosmos. In magical

terms, this is the alignment of one's will with higher forces.

Animal magnetism

Animal magnetism was developed by Franz Anton Mesmer (1734-1815), an Austrian physician and Freemason. Mesmer's method of "magnetic healing" was based on alchemical principles, and led to the development of hypnotherapy. To many of his contemporaries, his healing seemed magical. His use of magnets and the power of suggestion to influence the universal life force demonstrated the ability of will and consciousness to affect physical health.

After studying alchemists such as Paracelsus and Robert Fludd, Mesmer adopted the prevailing theory of the times that a magnetic fluid permeates and links all things and beings, including man, on earth and in the heavens. He believed the human body has a natural magnetic bipolarity, and that sickness and health are influenced by the balance of the vital fluid within the body. He experimented with magnets and had some spectacular healings. He surmised his own body was a magnet.

Mesmer set up a practice and was immediately popular. A few years later, he observed the work of an exorcist, Father Johann Gassner, who maintained that all illness was caused by demoniacal possession and could be cured only with exorcism. This led Mesmer to the discovery that he could cure without the need for magnets. The vital force or healing energy could be transmitted directly from healer to patient through touch or with the help of iron rods or wands.

Mesmer called this universal life force "animal magnetism." He envisioned the force as an invisible, fluidic, magnetic substance which permeates the universe and emanates from the planets, stars and moon and from human bodies. The fluid links all things. An imbalance of the fluid in the body creates illness, which can be corrected with the application of appropriate magnetic forces. Animal magnetism may be transferred from a healer, who has an excess of it in his nervous system, to a patient.

Mesmer's method consisted of a laying on of hands, staring fixedly into the eyes of the patient, and making slow passes in front of the patient's face with hands or a wand. He discovered that he could put people into a trance or sleep, which, if

deep enough, rendered operations painless.

The magnetized sleep also produced certain side effects: clairvoyance, telepathy, mediumistic ability, hallucinations, suggestibility and catalepsy. Mesmer left these phenomena largely unexplored, concentrating instead on the healing aspects of animal magnetism. His popular success incurred the animosity of the medical establishment, and he eventually was discredited.

Od (also Odic Force, Odyle)

Baron Karl von Reichenbach (1788-1869), a German chemist, metallurgist and expert on meteorites, used the term "Od" to describe a subtle substance which emanates from all things in the universe, including the stars and planets; it streams from crystals. Reichenbach said Od can be observed by clairvoyants as luminous radiations similar to an aurora borealis and can be sensed as hot or cold. He also believed it is affected by the breath and fluctuates during the day and night, and before and after meals.

Goethe anticipated his observations of the luminosities of plants by about 25 years, but Reichenbach was the first to make a scientific case for the universal life force by conducting hundreds of experiments with psychically sensitive people (but who were not Spiritualist mediums).

In 1845, Reichenbach published his findings in the first part of his *Researches on Magnetism, Electricity, Heat and Light in their relations to Vital Forces*. At the time, mesmerism was declining in popularity, and his work was an attempt to revive it. He was rejected by the scientific establishment, but endorsed by mesmerists, magnetic healers and Spiritualists. Reichenbach was a supporter of mesmerism, though he thought the term "animal magnetism" was inappropriate.

The complete edition of *Researches* appeared in 1850. The term "Odyle" was created by a translator who thought it sounded more scientific than Od. Reichenbach believed that the force could be stored in devices.

One of the first tasks of the Society for Psychical Research upon its formation in London in 1882 was to study "Reichenbach Phenomena." The SPR's study validated many of Reichenbach's claims, but Reichenbach still was shunned by

the scientific establishment. He spent his last years in retirement and disappointment at his castle in Reisenberg, Germany.

Orgone The term "orgone" was coined by Wilhelm Reich (1897-1957), a native of Austria, a student of Freud and a psychoanalyst. In developing the work of Freud between 1936 and 1940, Reich hypothesized on the existence of orgone, a vital force or primordial cosmic energy, as the basis of sex and psychosomatic neuroses. He agreed with Reichenbach that: it permeates all things and exists as a biological energy, is *blue in color* (emphasis is mine), and can be demonstrated visually, thermically and electroscopically in the atmosphere with a Geiger counter. Reich published his theory in 1942 in *The Discovery of the Orgone: The Function of the Orgasm; Sex - Economic Problems of Biological Energy* and in 1948 in *The Cancer Biopathy*.

Reich practiced in the United States and incurred legal trouble when he developed a device called the "orgone accumulator," a metallic box covered with organic material which was supposed to concentrate orgone for therapeutic uses. He used the device on cancer patients and reported positive results. The Food and Drug Administration tested the device and deemed it worthless. Reich was enjoined from manufacturing, distributing and using the device, and from using the term "orgone" in his writings. He refused, was fined and sent to jail, where he died. The orgone accumulators were destroyed and his books were burned.

Reich's work lives on in other concepts." Bioenergy" is a more modern term borrowed from Reich to describe the universal life force. Bioenergy radiates from human bodies, and is associated with such psychic phenomena as psychokinesis (PK). Bioenergy can be stored in battery devices called "psychotronic generators." It can be transmitted from one living organism to another with intentional purpose.

Similarly, "psychoenergy," a term for a form of PK, can be stored in "intentional devices. This has been demonstrated by physicist William Tiller, who has been studying consciousness and intentionality for years. He has shown that devices can be programmed with intention via meditation, and, like batteries, have an effect upon material things. His research has involved experienced meditators

who program a specific intention into an "intentional imprinted electrical device," a metal box charged with an electrical current. For example, the meditators might "send" the intention into the box that the temperature of water in a flask should be raised one degree. After programming the device, the box is set beside a flask of water -- and the temperature goes up. The intention emanates from the box to affect the physical environment.

In his book *Some Science Adventures with Real Magic* (2005), Tiller states that human consciousness, in the form of specific intentions, can have a "robust effect" on physical things.

What's more, the device itself does not seem to be important. You don't have to use a metal box charged with a current. Tiller says that intention can be programmed into any object. The key, he says, is consciousness.

Djinn and real magic

Magic is a superior power that arises from harnessing inner power through will and intention, combined with the power of divine or supernatural forces and beings, to achieve a desired outcome. Fundamental to magic is the manipulation of the electrical-like universal life force, either aimed through direct transmission or stored in devices and exotic weapons. The manipulation of the force can paralyze, hypnotize, put people into trances and sleep, alter thoughts, heal and cause illness, and move objects in ways that seem to defy "natural" laws. Human beings have learned how to manipulate the universal life force; the Djinn are superior at it.

Black magic to conquer the world

A chilling footnote to the Vril-ya was the appeal this story had to the Nazi party elite, many of whom were fascinated by the occult, including Adolf Hitler himself. The Vril Society was said to be secret order formed during the Nazi regime, who implemented a plan of racial genocide bent on eliminating "undesirables" to clear the way for a "pure" Aryan race. The elitist Nazis were involved in magical practices and lodges, among them the Thule Society, an external order of black magicians. Their calling upon dark powers to aid their genocidal and power goals

must surely have involved the Djinn, the terrorists of whom are willing and even eager to enter into insidious pacts with humans. The Nazis may have called them demons or spirits, but behind the names and facades were Djinn.

In addition to the Vril Society and Thule Society, the Nazi elite allegedly were members of the FOCG Lodge, also called the 99 Lodge. The 99 Lodge was a legendary black magic order serving Baphomet, a hybrid figure that has become a symbol of the satanic goat. Members gained riches and power with the help of their own personal demon (Djinn) assigned to them. There were 99 members in the lodge, and 98 other secret lodges around the world, each with 99 members, all said to be involved in pacts with demons.

Baphomet

Baphomet is a Djinn-like creature, depicted as half-human, half-goat with a horned goat head. The origin of the term "Baphomet" is unclear. It may be a corruption of Mahomet or Muhammed. The English occult historian Montague Summers suggested it was a combination of two Greek words, *baphe* and *metis*, or "absorption of knowledge." Baphomet has also been called the Goat of Mendes, the Black Goat, and the Judas Goat.

In the Middle Ages, Baphomet was considered an idol, and was represented by a human skull, a stuffed human head, or a metal or wooden human head with curly black hair. When the Order of the Knights Templar was demonized and persecuted in the 14th century, it was rumored that they worshipped Baphomet as their source of fertility and wealth.

The best-known representation of Baphomet is a drawing by the 19th century French magician, Eliphas Levi, called "the Baphomet of Mendes." Levi combined elements of the Tarot Devil card and the he-goat worshiped in antiquity in Mendes, Egypt, which was said to fornicate with its women followers, just as the Church later claimed the Devil did with witches.

The Church of Satan, founded in 1966 in San Francisco, adopted a rendition of Baphomet to symbolize Satanism. The symbol is a goat's head drawn within an inverted pentacle, enclosed in a double circle. In the outer circle, Hebraic figures at each point in the pentagram spell out the name of Leviathan, a huge water serpent demon associated with the Devil. In the Old Testament book of Job,

Leviathan is a whale-like entity who swallows Jonah. In Hebrew lore, Leviathan has two aspects, male, Leviathan, the Slant Serpent; and female, Lilith, the Tortuous Serpent, who is also associated with the Djinn.

Franz Bardon

In their quest for magical knowledge, the Nazis targeted Franz Bardon, one of the greatest and most knowledgeable occultists of modern times. Bardon, a Czech, was arrested, imprisoned and tortured by the Nazis to reveal the names and locations of the other secret lodges and members. Hitler offered Bardon a high position in his Third Reich in exchange for Bardon's magical help to win World War II. Bardon refused, and was severely tortured. He was subjected to operations without anesthesia, and was confined in iron balls and chains. The Nazis sent him to a concentration camp for three-and-a-half years. In 1945, he was sentenced to death, but the prison was bombed to ruins before the sentence could be carried out. Russian fellow prisoners helped him escape from the ruins. Bardon hid until the end of the war, when he made his way to Opava, Czechoslovakia, where he had been living.

What did he know that was so valuable? Bardon wrote four books that are still highly regarded as practical magic texts. As an adept and occultist, Bardon regarded magic as a path of enlightenment and wisdom. Fundamental to his magic is the manipulation of electrical energies, or universal life force, or Vril, and a principle that would be well understood by the Djinn.

In Bardon's universe, electric and magnetic fluids are comparable to the yin and yang principles of Taoism. Electric fluids (masculine or yang) are warm, positive and red in color, and magnetic fluids (feminine or yin) are cool, negative and blue in color. Together they make up the vital power or life force, which Baron Karl von Reichenbach had earlier called the "od" or "odyle" force. In fact, Bardon occasionally used von Reichenbach's term "od." According to Bardon, every part of the body is governed by either electric or magnetic energy, or is neutral. Disease arises when imbalances occur.

Bardon said that the human being is superior to all spirits, including angels and demons, because a human is tetrapole or four-pole; that is composed of all four

elements. Each element has its own energetics, and a magician must learn how to balance his or her own elements before proceeding any further in magical training. Failure to learn this results in failure in magical work and is hazardous to the magician. The harmonizing and balancing of inner elements is accomplished through self-observation, meditation and recording of one's strengths and weaknesses, and remedial measures. This enables the practitioner to have control over the beings of the elements and elemental realm.

Bardon gave instructions for proper concentration and breathing, including a special breathing through the skin: visualization and element manipulation; rituals; levitation; astral travel; development of psychic abilities, such as clairvoyance and clairaudience; use of magic mirrors for astral travel and healing and gaining access to higher spiritual levels.

The fluid condensers

Of particular interest are Bardon's "fluid condensers," magical tools that can be "loaded" for the concentration, storage, and manipulation of electric and magnetic forces of the universal life force. These may have caught the particular attention of the Nazis as a potential asset to their war. Perhaps the Djinn's brooms and scythes back in the Black Death were loaded tools for manipulating the universal life force.

Bardon defined three types of fluid condensers: solid, liquid and aerial. He created various alchemical recipes for fluid condensers. He said their "charge" or power could be increased significantly by the addition of gold or gold tincture. The magician's blood or sperm also increases the charge.

Solid fluid condensers are made of resins and metals. Liquid ones are tinctures, oils, lacquers and extracts composed from resins produced by plants. Aerial ones are fumigations, flavors, selling waters and evaporations; Bardon considered these the least important in magical work.

When properly made and stored, fluid condensers can keep their power for long periods of time, even indefinitely. They are used in magical rituals and are controlled by will and imagination to affect other things, including the body and physical health. A liquid fluid condenser can be added to potions or incense compounds, or placed in bowls to concentrate energies.

Bardon was adept at working with spirits, many of them quite powerful beings, but he cautioned others on the dangers of making pacts and deals with them. With his vast knowledge and experience, and his understanding of how to control the universal life force, no wonder the Nazi powers wanted to use him. The right manipulation of the life force could be used for oppression, subjugation and killing instead of healing and spiritual advancement.

Blasting rods

A magical equivalent of Bardon's fluid condenser is the blasting rod, which also bears similarities to Bramley's Black Death broom weapons. Blasting rods are wands used to control spirits and generate powerful forces - a harnessing of the universal life force. The wand is a charged magical tool used in summoning spirits and in spell casting, but is a neutral device that can be applied for both positive and negative magic. A blasting rod, on the other hand, is used to produce a more punishing force.

According to the *Grand Grimoire*, a French magical handbook probably written in the 17th or 18th century, the blasting rod is a hand wand with forked ends that are capped with *magnetized steel* (my emphasis). The grimoire says that God gave a blasting rod to the angel who drove Adam and Eve out of Paradise and used it to smite rebellious angels. The rod "collects the clouds, disperses tempests, averts the lightning, or precipitates each and all upon any portion of the earth at the pleasure of its director."

Allan Bennett (1872-1923), an English occultist and a principal member of the prestigious Hermetic Order of the Golden Dawn, possessed a blasting rod that was a glass rod taken from a chandelier and consecrated with magical power. The rod was mounted in a wooden handle painted with words of power. Bennett changed the words according to the purpose of his magical operations. According to lore, a Theosophist acquaintance once ridiculed the idea of a blasting rod, and found himself paralyzed for 14 hours - an apparent lesson from Bennett.

A Djinn blasting rod?

Lethal plague brooms, fluid condensers and blasting rods take on an even more

interesting significance concerning the Djinn, whose leaders possess rods or scepters that they wield as part of their power. According to Mahmoud:

The Djinn seem to possess some sort of alloy. One of my first encounters with them proved this. When the *sahir* summoned the Djinn, the oldest one or the leader had some kind scepter or rod with him. When summoned he was the first Djinn to arrive. He would strike the ground with this scepter or rod.

I did not see this rod, but I could hear it make contact with the ground, and you would even see holes where it had made impact. It was invisible but you would hear it whenever he struck the ground. He would strike the ground when he was angry, when summoned and when returning. It was the first thing you heard, and then he would give a loud growl, then deep groan and come through. After he arrived the rest of the Djinn would follow.

I remember his voice was the most human voice, like a grand father but full of energy and vitality. He was pleasant to talk to, the rest sounded like monsters.

There was this time when the Djinn with a horrible voice, I believe his second in command, was telling me not to be afraid. The more he would say it, the more I was frightened. This was the only time I ever heard Djinn with some sort of weapon or rod. I must say that they went out of their way to calm my nerves, explaining what they were and that they were here on Earth many years ago.

The attempts to calm should not be mistaken for an olive branch of friendship. Some Djinn look for humans who will collaborate with them.

Crowley's entities

Allan Bennett was renowned for his magical prowess at evoking spirits. He helped to organize the Golden Dawn materials, which are still in use today. He taught magical skills to Aleister Crowley (1875-1947), the most famous magician of modern times:

It is worth a diversion to consider the entities that Crowley trafficked with in his tumultuous magical career, for they were most likely Djinn. There is an ET connection, too. I am not characterizing his magic, or the magic developed by the Golden Dawn, as "black" or negative magic. Magic is neutral, and like any tool, can be applied for good or bad purpose. The Golden Dawn, as well as Crowley, regarded magic as a spiritual path of mastery and enlightenment. Summoning entities is part of the work.

Crowley exhibited unusual powers and skills, and a rather twisted personality, early in life. He was just a young man when stories circulated about his own innate blasting power – no rod necessary. He had mesmerizing eyes and an aura of supernatural power. A ghostly light reportedly surrounded him, which he said was his astral spirit. One of his flat neighbors claimed to be hurled downstairs by a malevolent force, and visitors said they experienced dizzy spells while climbing the stairs or felt an overwhelming "evil" presence.

In 1898, Crowley was initiated into the Golden Dawn in London, which was only about a decade old. He immediately impressed Bennett, who moved into his flat and broke Golden Dawn rules by teaching him magic that was supposed to be beyond his initiation level. Crowley's arrogance and abrasive personality eventually led to his expulsion from the order.

Aiwass

In 1903, Crowley married Rose Kelly and they went to Cairo for their honeymoon, where Crowley had the first of his most important entity contacts. On March 18, 1904, Rose suddenly began trance channeling, receiving communications from the astral plane that the Egyptian god, Horus, was waiting for Crowley. The communicating entity was a messenger, Aiwass. The entity was distinctly different and more unfathomable than other entities he had encountered. He was, said

Crowley, "a Being whose mind was so different from mine that we failed to converse. All my wife obtained from Him was to command me to do things magically absurd. He would not play my game: I must play His."

Crowley originally spelled the entity's name "Aiwaz" and then changed it to "Aiwass" for astrological reasons.

On April 7, 1904, Aiwass commanded that the drawing room of the Crowleys' Cairo apartment be turned into a temple. Aiwass ordered Crowley to enter the temple precisely at noon on the next three days, and to write down exactly what he heard for precisely one hour.

Crowley followed the instructions. Inside the "temple," he sat alone at a table facing the southern wall. From behind him came the voice of Aiwass, which Crowley described as "a rich tenor or baritone... deep timbre, musical and expressive, its tones solemn, voluptuous, tender, fierce, or aught else as suited the moods of the message." The voice was "the Speech in the Silence," he said. During the dictation, Crowley did not see a visual apparition of Aiwass, though he did have a mental impression. Aiwass had a body of fine matter or astral matter, transparent as a veil of gauze or a cloud of incense-smoke. He seemed to be a tall, dark man in his thirties, well-knit, active and strong, with the face of a savage king, and eyes veiled lest their gaze should destroy what they saw." Aiwass was dressed in the garb of an Assyrian or Persian.

Over three days, Aiwass dictated information to Crowley. The result was *Liber Legis*, better known as *The Book of the Law*, Crowley's most important work. Central to it is the Law of Thelema: "Do what thou wilt shall be the whole of the Law." The law has been misinterpreted to mean doing as one pleases. According to Crowley, it means that one does what one must and nothing else. Perfect magic is the complete and total alignment of the will with universal will, or cosmic forces. When one surrenders to that alignment, one becomes a perfect channel for the flow of cosmic forces.

Besides the Law of Thelema, the book holds that every person is sovereign and shall be self-fulfilled in the Aeon. "Every man and every woman is a star," it states. However, the Aeon of Horus would be preceded by an era of great violence, aggression and fire.

Aiwass told Crowley that he had been selected by the "Secret Chiefs," the disembodied master adepts behind the Golden Dawn, to be the prophet for the

coming "Aeon of Horus," the third great age of humanity. Crowley genuinely believed that the Aeon of Horus would spread around the world like a new religion - Crowleyanity -- and replace all other religions. *The Book of the Law* remained Crowley's focus for the rest of his life. The Aeon of Horus never caught on with the masses, though Crowley's work remains a substantial force in magic.

Crowley insisted that he never understood all of what Aiwass dictated. However, the style compares to some of his other writings, suggesting that the material may have originated at least in part in his subconscious. The self-fulfillment promised him by Aiwass eluded him. Throughout his life Crowley believed he had the ability to manifest whatever he desired, including large sums of money, but after squandering his inheritance he was never able to do so.

For years Crowley remained in awe of Aiwass. *In The Equinox of the Gods*, he acknowledged that he never fully understood the nature of Aiwass. He alternately called the entity "a God or Demon or Devil"; a preterhuman intelligence; a minister or messenger of other Gods; his own Guardian Angel, and his own subconscious (the last he rejected in favor of the Holy Guardian Angel, part of his Higher Self that was a discrete entity). Crowley also said he was permitted from time to time to see Aiwass in a physical appearance, inhabiting a human body, as much a material man as Crowley himself.

Aiwass has all the hallmarks of Djinn: a smoky, astral matter form capable of taking on a solid manlike form; an imperious manner and insistence on making all the rules; powerful eyes; a commanding presence; and an association with a hybrid deity, the falcon-headed Horus. The contact took place in the natural territory of Djinn. The Djinn may have wanted to take advantage of Crowley's magical talent and his own compelling personality to transmit charged information that would gain a foothold or energetic link in the physical world.

Just who would be fomenting the predicted era of violence to precede the Aeon of Horus? The Djinn, via influence on humans?

Choronzon

In 1909, Crowley and his assistant, Victor Neuberg, went to Algiers. While walking through the desert, Crowley received a direct communication from Aiwass, "Call

me." The result was a dramatic encounter with Choronzon, the powerful "Dweller of the Abyss" - and probably another Djinn.

By this time, Rose was history - she divorced Crowley - and Crowley was engaged in exploring the Enochian calls produced by John Dee and Edward Kelly in the 16th century. The 19 calls are part of a magical system of invocations to access different realms; the 19th Call accesses 30 aethyrs, states of expanded consciousness. The calls are performed in the Enochian language, which was transmitted by "angels" to Dee and Kelly. (The true identity of the beings behind the Dee transmissions could be debated as Djinn instead of angels, but that is outside the scope of this book.)

Crowley had with him the Enochian calls, and interpreted Aiwass's summons as a divine message to use them. He and Neuberg went to a mount in the desert to do the workings, and spent days working their way up the aethyrs of the 19th Call, starting at 30, the lowest. In the 11th aethyr, Crowley was told that in the 10th aethyr he would have to make a conscious crossing of the Abyss, inhabited by a single entity, Choronzon, the first and deadliest of all the powers of evil," a being comprised of complete negation.

The ritual for crossing the Abyss took place on December 9, 1909. When entities are evoked in ritual magic, the magician remains within a protected circle and summons the entity into a triangle, which serves as a container and a way for the magician to maintain control. Crowley placed himself in the triangle, thus endangering himself physically, mentally and even spiritually, Neuberg was in the circle. Pigeon blood was sprinkled as an offering. Crowley went into full trance. Neuberg heard a voice mimicking Crowley, calling out magical names and then blasphemies. Visions appeared within the triangle. First Neuberg saw the form of a woman prostitute he had known in Paris. The "woman" tried to seduce him, but Neuberg resisted, assuming it was Choronzon in a shape-shifted form. The "woman" then offered submission, which he also rejected. It next turned into an old man, then a snake, and then into Crowley, who begged for water. Neuberg held fast within the circle.

Neuberg ordered Choronzon to declare his nature. The entity replied that he spat upon the name of the Most High. He was Master of the Triangle who had no fear of the pentagram (Seal of Solomon). He would give Neuberg words that the magician would take as "great secrets of magic" but would be worthless, a joke

played by the entity.

Neuberg invoked Aiwass, but Choronzon said all the dealings with Aiwass were "but a cloak for thy filthy sorceries."

Choronzon said his name was "Dispersion" and he could not be bested in argument. He uttered a rapid string of blasphemies that distracted Neuberg, who was writing everything down. Choronzon threw sand onto the magic circle, blurring the protective barrier and enabling the entity to breach the circle. In the form of a naked man, he leaped on Neuberg and threw him to the ground. The two fought furiously. Choronzon tried to tear out Neuberg's throat with his froth-covered fangs. At last Neuberg was able to force Choronzon back into the triangle, and he repaired the magic circle.

Choronzon threatened Neuberg with all the tortures of hell, and Neuberg denounced him as a liar. After a long time in argument and verbal abuse, the entity suddenly vanished. Crowley came out of his trance and the men formally ended the ritual. Crowley viewed the ritual as a success, and declared himself Master of the Temple and Secret Chief.

Neuberg always maintained that he actually wrestled with Choronzon and not with Crowley possessed by the entity. Some of Crowley's associates felt Crowley was never the same, and had been damaged and even permanently possessed by Choronzon.

Choronzon was probably a high level dangerous Djinn - mocking, fearless, crafty and shape-shifting. His ability to break out of the triangle and breach protection is an example of what can go seriously wrong in attempts to summon Djinn.

Lam

A third and final Crowley entity of note for our purposes here is Lam, who has ET associations and, like the other entities, is probably a Djinn. In 1918, Crowley conducted a sex magic ritual called the "Amalantrah working with Roddie Minor, known as Soror Ahitha, in New York City. The working opened an interdimensional portal in the spaces between stars, through which Lam was able to enter the known physical universe. The manifestation came through the

mediumship and visions of Minor.

Crowley believed Lam to be the soul of a dead Tibetan lama from Leng, between China and Tibet. "Lam" is Tibetan for "Way" or "Path," which Crowley said had the numerical value of 71, or "No Thing," a gateway to the Void and a link between the star systems of Sirius and Andromeda. Lam would fulfill the work initiated by Aiwass. "It's all in the egg," Crowley said they were told.

Crowley drew a portrait of Lam, and it bears a strong resemblance to the gray aliens of modern ET abductions. The head is bulbous and egg shaped with a pointed chin, and the mouth is a slit. The eyes extend part way around the face, but are not the huge black eyes of the grays. Crowley said that gazing on Lam's image opens up contact with him.

A cult of Lam developed and was formalized by Kenneth Grant in 1987. Grant (1924-2011), an associate of Crowley's, headed the Typhonian Ordo Templi Orientis (now Typhonian Order). Part of the Lam Workings use the Egg as an astral vehicle for accessing Lam's domain. Grant stated, "Lam is a Great Old One whose archetype is recognizable in accounts of UFO occupants."

Some occultists today believe that Crowley's portal is widening, and increasing numbers of ETs and UFOs have come through it to our world. "Lam" is even considered to be a class of entities, not a single entity.

Perhaps the doorway is really used by Djinn cloaked in an ET guise.

Djinn and political Sorcery

Crowley's engagement with these and other Djinn-like entities was part of his quest for magical power and spiritual knowledge. The Nazis were interested in using magic as a force for conquering and subjugation. The Nazis have not been the only government/military power interested in making deals with Djinn. Governments have always sought the help of spirits. The practice goes on today.

In March 2002, Sheikh Mubarak Gilani gave CBS news an interview. He had been accused of terrorism in the days following the 2001 World Trade Center attack. In January 2002, Western journalist Daniel Pearl was kidnapped en route to meet with Gilani, and then was savagely murdered by beheading. Gilani was a mysterious, powerful figure, reputed in his land to be a direct descendant of the

Prophet Muhammad. There were many topics he could have addressed in his interview. Strangely, one of them that he chose was the Djinn, and a warning to Westerners that the Djinn are avenues of power that can be exploited by the enemies of the West. Gilani told Westerners what is well known in his part of the world: the Djinn can be used as a force to aid any cause:

There are beings who are not visible to you... But they inhabit this earth. And they are damaging, causing psychotic diseases, fits, epilepsies. And controlling the agents, controlling the human beings.⁶

Gilani said he could control the Djinn, and that he was not a threat to the United States, but rather could be its salvation. He used the television science fiction show *The X-Files*, which focused on the ET abduction phenomenon, to illustrate his points. In the show, the aliens exert mind control and an evil influence that is like the power of the invisible forces (the Djinn).

What is an X-file? Most of things - could have happened or will happen... Human beings can be made to do things against their will. They can be made to commit crimes. They can be made to go and kill people. You know? And all your missiles, all your rockets, space ships go up. And electronics, they can be damaged, influenced, and mis directed through the agencies of Jinn beings.⁷

Gilani said the Djinn are a much bigger threat to the United States than terrorism, and the U.S. should thank him for passing on this message instead of accusing him of terrorism.

The message about the Djinn fell on deaf ears and was dismissed as superstitious beliefs from a foreign part of the world. We would have been wise to pay more attention. The Djinn do participate in human terrorism, which is alarming enough. Even more important, they have a bigger agenda. To them, they are not doing the bidding of the terrorists, but rather the terrorists who summon and send them are aiding their own project against human beings. Who

is serving who?

The sorcery of spirits Since antiquity, human beings have called upon spiritual forces for all kinds of aid, including conquering rivals and enemies. The Romans used curse tablets to call upon the gods to eliminate rivals in love, sports, business and politics. The priestly castes of many societies have summoned spirit help to repel attackers and to conquer other peoples. There are many mercenaries in the spirit world who gladly answer the call, eager to shed blood and absorb the vitality of it, to have some sport, or to pursue their own purposes. There are helpful, protecting beings, too, and they also engage in combat.

Spirit summoning for attack goes on everywhere in modern times. Even in the West, for every person who calls upon God and angels for aid, there are those who knock on the doors of the dark forces. Their reasons are many; one is that the dark forces will be more powerful and swifter than the forces of light. Chaos, mayhem, accidents, bad luck, illness, the spilling of blood - all of those things can get a mighty push from spirits who are called out. The morals of good versus evil become quite murky, even when calling upon the forces of light. When you feel your cause is right, you do not consider it evil. Your victim does. This limbo land of morals and motives makes quite a playground for entities who want to see humanity go down. They are like the human merchants of arms and weapons who sell to both sides in a war. No matter who loses and who wins the war - they win.

"Jinn catchers" and politics In April 2011, more than two dozen high level officials in the Iranian government were arrested on charges of practicing black magic and sorcery. Such accusations were commonplace around the world centuries ago, even in Europe. Today they make headlines in the Western media as tabloid fare. Westerners dismiss such matters as backward, but in many parts of the world, they are taken quite seriously.

In June 2011, the prestigious *The Wall Street Journal* published an interview with a high-ranking Iranian sorcerer, or "Jinn catcher," whose clientele includes prestigious clerics, politicians and others among the ruling elite. Seyed Sadigh (an alias used by the sorcerer) told the *WSJ* that "he doesn't waste Jinn powers on trivial matters such as love and money," but concentrates instead on matters

of national security and government stability. He makes prayers and casts spells, and also uses Djinn to consult with other Djinn to obtain information, almost like a spy service. It's a modern version of the ancient lore that held that Djinn eavesdrop on angels to find out what is going on, including events that will happen in the future. Sadigh's Djinn consultants work for the Mossad, the Israeli intelligence agency; the Central Intelligence Agency of the United States; and intelligence services in the Arab Gulf countries and elsewhere, he said.

Westerners are tempted to laugh at this, but it was not so long ago that the same thing with a different twist was done by a pope. Pius XI (r. 1922-39) was quite public about his close relationship with his guardian angel. He confided to Monsignor Angelo Roncalli (who became Pope John XXIII) that angels helped him in his many delicate diplomatic dealings. Prior to meeting someone whom he needed to persuade, he prayed to his guardian angel to take up his case with the guardian angel of the other person. Sometimes he would invoke the other person's guardian angel directly, and ask for the angel to enlighten his human charge. When the two guardian angels reached an agreement, things always went smoothly on the human level. His strategy worked, for Pius XI was renowned for his diplomatic achievements.

Meanwhile, in Iran, President Ahmadinejad was accused of being under a Djinn spell himself. Perhaps mindful of the Western mindset, he made light of it and said all of the sorcery tales were a joke.

My Moroccan source Mahmoud has this observation about politics in Africa:

In Africa all politicians go to the Djinn in order to win elections or retain power or win favor with political rivals. The last *sahir* (sorcerer] I went to had an active politician going to him, and that politician won a particular seat he was vying for. Everyone who is aware goes to the Djinni, so it becomes a battle of who has the strongest Djinn and most experienced *salir*. Politicians spend a lot of money

— they can spend close to \$5000 on one sitting,

A typical Djinn pattern is, whenever elections are coming

close in any country, where you want to detect the people in power using Djinn, you will see the frequency of human deaths increase. An accident will kill 20 people. In order to stay in power, human blood must be spilt and the Djinn can collect after or before the person wins and retains power. Innocent blood is the best when it comes to the Djinn. The Djinn can claim (the victims] themselves, or if the people in power are powerful enough, they can stage certain massacres or make sure planes develop mechanical problems. All who die on board will be a sacrifice to the Djinn.

Qaddafi's soldiers even left incantations when they were retreating, calling on the help of the Djinn, more specifically the *shayarin*, to give them victory. In October 2011 Libyan dictator Muammar Qaddafi was killed during fighting in the revolution that overthrew his long regime.) The Djinn can deliver power, but after some time it slowly fades. And if you cannot fulfill the next quota of human blood sacrifice, in most cases you will pay with your life or die violently and lose everything,

This is a level that is way above normal society, and so the public has no idea that they are the guinea pigs. Those who are aware watch in horror as these things are carried out. If the Djinn ever became prevalent in terms of use in a place like the USA, you can expect the next American civil war. But fortunately they are just being used by the elite. Although you feel the oppression of the Djinn, you won't see as many deaths, at least not yet.

In addition to using Djinn for information, sorcerers who serve governments employ them in spell casting to influence or weaken adversaries - the same as an ordinary person might call upon them to eradicate a love rival or personal foe. How do the Djinn accomplish this? Through erosions of the victim's universal life

force. The life force that surrounds a person in the aura offers a buffer against intrusions of all sorts, but when weakened or punctured, makes a person vulnerable to oppression and illness.

The invasion can be accomplished through attachment, dreams and paranormal harassment, but often the victim's own moral weaknesses provide the doorway. In many cases, the victim does not even know they are under an influence that is slowly siphoning their life force.

From earth politics to interdimensional politics

I mention these accounts of human-summoned Djinn to show that entities are deeply involved in the affairs of human beings, from personal levels to high political levels. They always have been from the moment of humanity's creation, as we have seen in earlier chapters. We are entangled in a complicated web of interactions, in which entities collude with humans and also act on their own against humans to carry out various agendas. The more our attention is diverted in many directions, the less likely we are to see what is really going on.

We can see from the above that knowledge of how to manipulate the universal life force can be a formidable tool – or weapon - in exploitation. Unfortunately, visionaries who have mastered the life force are discredited, marginalized and persecuted. The beings who are visiting us with hostile intent have the knowledge and the tools to use our own natural forces against us. Abductees and other experiencers of negative entity contacts report paralyzing states, trances of oblivion, psychological distress, physical harm, exposure to death rays," and adverse effects on health, including wasting away and life-threatening illnesses. Researchers who have died of rare and fast-spreading cancers, such as Karla Turner, have raised eyebrows in the community as to whether or not their illness was directly related to their contact experiences and to their work to expose what is going on. It is difficult to prove such a connection, and we are left to speculate on the evidence.

To our credit, we humans have proved difficult to eliminate — but we are easy to manipulate. Campaigns that are not in our best interests have been initiated for the long term. Many of the alien manipulators have plenty of time and a great deal of patience to see them through.

Chapter 10

Reptilians and Reptoids

ONE OF THE STRONGEST connections between Djinn and ETs are the reptilian aliens, described in many abduction accounts. The reptilians are powerful authority figures and often are observed directing the activities of the grays.

The Djinn have been known for centuries to favor snakes, serpents and reptile-human hybrids as shape-shifted forms. Ancient drawings of Djinn depict them as half-human, half-reptilian in form with clawed hands, horns and reptilian eyes. Muhammad advised his followers to be careful about snakes in houses, for they might be Djinn, and they should not be killed outright, lest Djinn relatives react in revenge. Snakes should be asked three times to leave; if they still remained, they were probably natural snakes, and then it would be permissible to kill them.

The Western world has had a long, uneasy and problematic relationship with the serpent, despite the serpent's exalted status in most mythologies. In conspiracy circles, reptilians are the shape-shifting evil overlords of the New World Order. They are reported to carry on salacious sex with humans - which some contactees say is better than human sex. They are said to be plotting the violent overthrow of the human race. The religious see them as servants of Satan.

Whatever they are, intelligent reptilians, especially in humanoid form, have a long presence on the planet, and people have encountered them. Two main types

have emerged in the literature: the reptoids, a subterranean hybrid of reptilian in humanoid form, and the extraterrestrial Dracos, who also are a combination of reptile and human forms. The reptoids may be an ancient race that has lived below the surface of the earth, sharing the planet with humans for millennia. Both types are associated with ET and UFO activity, and play a role in ET abductions, usually along with grays, and also gray-reptilian hybrids.

Characteristics

The appearance of reptoids is formidable. According to John Rhodes, the leading researcher of reptoids, they range from 6.5-8 feet tall and have a heavy, muscular, broad-shouldered build. Their feet have three claws and a recessive fourth toe. They have three fingers with an opposable thumb, and long fingernails. Their eyes are almond-shaped and they have no head or body hair, but are covered by scales that range in size, becoming finer and finer in the more flexible areas of the body. They wear no clothing, but some have chest plates, and/or a single belt with one or two devices on it, which they may touch when they dematerialize. Some have been reported with cranial ridges and small horns. They have wide lips for mouths, two slits for the nose, and small openings for ears.

The Dracos, said Rhodes, have a leathery cape that resembles wings more protuberances on their bodies; they are sometimes sighted in areas when mass deaths have occurred. They seem to be the elite - ancients ones who are in control.

Reptoids, like Djinn, possess supernormal powers and strength, can move through physical matter such as walls, and can appear and disappear instantly. The sheer sight of them can be paralyzing.

The descriptions of reptilians recorded by abductees are similar. In her book *The Art of Close Encounters* (2010), abductee Kim Carlsberg says that at first she assumed there was one type of reptilian, but discovered there are many species of them interacting with humans. Many are 6-7 feet tall with a muscular, man-like build, though some are shorter or taller. Some have tails, some don't; some have

cranial ridges, some don't; some wear a breast-plate with wide, ventral plates, while others have scales on the chest. Four fingered hands are the most common, though some have three and some have five. The size and coloring of scales varies.!

A parallel civilization

Rhodes began documenting the history, folklore and modern-day encounters of reptoids long before many people were talking about them. His research has extended into Djinn. Rhodes has explored caves and tunnels where reptoids are reported, especially in southwestern parts of the United States. The underground openings and passages may be part of portal areas where reptoids come and go between worlds.

"These reptilian creatures are from a parallel civilization of Earth origin," Rhodes told me. "It is difficult for us to think that we have brothers and sisters who are other races. The reptoids occupy the underworld of the planet. They are neighbors. They are intelligent."

We evolved alongside reptoids, who split off from us a long time ago, he said. They are now returning to the surface. Rather than fear them, it would be to our benefit to establish a harmonious relationship with them. Perceptions of them, however, have been distorted by the media, and also by a social trend of people reporting intimate relationships with them. Rhodes discounts many reports of the latter. More reliable reports, he said, describe telepathic communication in brief encounters. Among themselves, they communicate in clicking sounds and grunts.

Some of my Djinn reports contain descriptions of hearing clicking sounds while Shadow People are present in some form. ET abductees report clicking sounds as well.

Rhodes has always pointed out that, as frightening as reptoids are, they are not necessarily evil. They are neither all good nor all evil, but a mix of intentions, personalities and behaviors — a lot like us. That, I believe, corresponds to the Djinn as well.

From wisdom to evil

The serpent actually is one of the oldest, most universal and most revered symbols in mythology. Although negative associations exist, the serpent is predominantly associated with wisdom, enlightenment, immortality, healing, renewal, magic and the guardianship of hidden treasure.

The serpent figures in many creation myths. For example, the Orphic Mysteries in ancient Greece, circa the 5th century BCE, say that in the beginning there were two winged serpents. They produced an egg, and one wrapped itself around it and squeezed it until it broke open, revealing Phanes, a hermaphrodite god with no body but the heads of a bull, lion, ram and serpent, four eyes and horns. Phanes, the first light and intellect, created the heavens and the material world.

The Hopi say that their ancestors emerged from an underworld city after the last Great Purification. The underworld was a place of abundance maintained by Ant People under the supervision of their Elder Brothers the Snake People. Perhaps the Ant People were early "grays," who are ant-like in their behavior, and the Snake People were the first reptilian "ETS," suggests Rhodes. Both, however, are from the earth, not outer space. (Interestingly, several years ago I communicated with a hostile Djinn who was causing a lot of paranormal havoc on a piece of property. The Djinn said it had been there first before humans, that it lived underground, that it's "family" was Hopi, and that it harassed people because it was fun, and because it did not get the proper respect from humans.)

Numerous deities have been associated with serpents. The Aztec god Quetzacoatl is the "Plumed Serpent," and is prophesied to return as a great teacher. The "Rainbow Serpent" in Australian mythology is a creator deity. Asklepios, the Greek god of healing, has a totemic serpent entwined on a staff. Hermes, the Greek god of learning and magic, carries a caduceus wand entwined by two serpents. Athena, the Greek goddess of wisdom, has a serpent on her shield. The Nagas of Vedic lore are human/serpent beings who possess a high level of wisdom. In yoga, the kundalini, the energy of enlightenment, is likened to a coiled serpent that sleeps at the base of the spine, and rises to the crown of the head when awakened by spiritual study and discipline.

Jesus acknowledged the wisdom of the serpent in his statement, "Be ye therefore wise as serpents and harmless as doves." (Matthew 10:16) But even that does not counter the dominant darker picture of serpents presented in the Bible: that of deceiver and an agent of evil.

Djinn and the serpent of Eden

In Genesis, a serpent tempts Eve to eat the fruit of the Tree of Knowledge, thus causing the Fall of humanity from grace, and the expulsion of Adam and Eve from the Garden of Eden. As punishment, God condemns the serpent to travel upon its belly. The serpent went on to symbolize lies, treachery and evil, serving as the inspiration for the forked tongue and serpent-tailed representations of the Devil.

The physical appearance of the Biblical serpent is controversial. Genesis does not give an exact description. Some illustrations of the Eden serpent depict a reptilian-humanoid being. The serpent talks to Eve and exhibits intelligence and will. But, like reptoids, did it walk upright or slither on the ground as a normal snake?

In some Jewish legends, the Genesis serpent is a tall, extremely intelligent creature with actual arms and legs. He was created by God to be king of all creatures and eat the same food as humans. But his envy of humans, which was the evil within him, caused him to bring about the Fall.

A Muslim tradition tells that when Allah created Adam and Eve, Iblis slipped into Eden to try to find a way to tempt them to evil. He sought help from the animals there, but the only one who agreed was the serpent, a female, who walked on four legs. Iblis promised to protect her against Adam and his offspring in exchange for her help. The serpent secreted Iblis into Eden between her fangs, and thus both of them spoke simultaneously. Through the serpent, Iblis went to Adam and Eve and wept false tears,

explaining he was sad that they were mortal and would die, but he could give them eternal life. He took them to the Tree of Eternity, the only tree forbidden to them by Allah, and persuaded them to eat the fruit. They ate at the same time, sharing the sin. They repented and were forgiven by Allah. Iblis was cast out and the serpent was condemned to crawl on her belly. Iblis and the serpent married and had Djinn offspring. Iblis also mated with other beings and produced demonic entities such as Lilith.

Roswellian reptilians?

In July 1947, a UFO allegedly crashed near Roswell, New Mexico, and alien

corpses were recovered and taken to a military base, where they were seen by various people. Various descriptions of the beings have been given, from- small creatures with Asian-like features to something that might be more reptilian.

"Glenn Dennis, the mortician who supplied small, hermetically sealed coffins to the base hospital, saw an illustration drawn by a nurse who was working on the base," said Rhodes. "She drew a creature with hands that had small circular pads on them. That's something we see all the time in arboreal (tree) lizards."

The description of the beings' skin also was more lizard-like. "These physical descriptions, rather than describing a form originating from outer space, were strikingly similar to those of other Earth evolved reptilian species," Rhodes said. "It seems as though we have been encouraged to speculate about extra terrestrial origins of these beings when we are most likely dealing with creatures from our own planet. Rather than pointing upwards towards the clouds, this evidence pointed downwards toward the earth - so these ET aliens' might really be creatures who actually evolved here on Earth."

Reptilians and abductions

In many abduction accounts, reptilian beings are usually in charge of grays and gray-reptilian hybrids. They - and the grays — are highly organized and militaristic in their demeanor. They seem apathetic to human fear and suffering, though on occasion are sympathetic and even apologetic. (The lack of concern for humans is characteristic of some Djinn behavior as well.)

Some abductees maintain a contact with reptilians through meditation and astral or out-of-body experience, according to Carlsberg.

The following descriptions come from *The Art of Close Encounters*.² I have added some of my own observations and interpretations in parentheses:

- "Renjeck" is the name of a highly intelligent male reptilian who works as an agent for grays policing and removing intrusive alien species. He made his first contact with a male abductee in childhood. Renjeck sometimes wears a black cape and carries a backpack with a gun-like rod that induces paralysis; the backpack seems to be the power source. Renjeck shape-shifts into a ball of red light. (*My notes: The black cape is consistent with Shadow People and Djinn*

descriptions. The Djinn often make first contact in child hood. They would be vigilant about eliminating any other alien beings who would conflict with thier own agenda. They shape-shift into balls of light of varying colors; I have seen this myself. The gun-like rod is suggestive of the "brooms" used by the black humanoids in the Black Death plagues, the blast ing rods of magic, and the fluid condensers of Franz Bardon.)

A male reptilian appeared to a female human shape-shifted into the form of a handsome, blond man who felt "human" to the touch. In reptilian form, he had smooth, snake-like skin, a wide slit for a mouth, and jagged teeth. When departing, it seemed that he was sucked into another dimension. His interest in the woman seemed related to past lives, and to creating hybrids. (My notes: Djinn who wish to engage sexually with humans will take on beautiful, appealing forms. Past-life connections, and recurring contacts through lifetimes, are possible with the long-lived Djinn. Other accounts of Djinn describe similar fast departures.)

-Another male reptilian appearing to another female human is about 6 feet tall with khaki-colored, snake-like skin and a breastplate that resembles a turtle shell. He is the hybrid product of humans and at least one species of reptoids. The reptilian transforms himself into a ball of white light. He is authoritative and seems to be like a fleet commander: "He is highly disciplined and self-righteous. He regards his race as superior to human beings and thinks of humans as mere animals, the mutts of the universe." (My notes: Djinn, to every detail)

-Reptilian grays have combinations of reptilian and gray features. They have big heads with pointed chins, overly large but reptilian eyes, and scaly skin. They are often seen wearing military-like garb and sashes. They may work on their own, or in groups under the supervision of reptilians or other tall beings. (My notes: Djinn might take this form as a deception to confuse human abductees.)

The literature on abducting reptilians has proliferated in recent years, and dozens upon dozens of accounts and descriptions have been given. Details may vary, but the threads running through them remain consistent, and point to a Djinn involvement.

Turkish ufologist Farah Yurdozu has written on the relationship between Djinn and reptilians, and between Djinn and ETs. The Djinn are well-known for abducting people, taking human children, and exchanging their children with human

children. Abductees often awaken with marks and bruises on their bodies, which they believe come from beatings by the Djinn. Sometimes their hands are stained brown, called "the trace of the jinn." In Turkish tradition, this especially happens to children who are taken during the night by Djinn and then returned to their beds by morning. According to Yurdozu, this brown stain effect has been reported on bodies and clothing by abductees in the United States, said Yurdozu.

Yurdozu's own family has been affected for at least three generations by reptilians who visited her great-grandfather in the 1890s. Refik Kiris was married with five children, and was severely financially strapped. One day when all of his family was away visiting relatives, Kiris was approached by a stranger who knew all about his life and financial worries. The stranger told him that he would help, and that Kiris would have some late night visitors, but not to be afraid.

When Kiris went to bed that night, the door to his bedroom opened and two reptilian humanoids entered. They were tall and walked on two legs, and they wore no clothes. Their skin was dark and oily, and partially covered with hair. They had horns, tails, and reptilian eyes.

Kiris was petrified, but found himself completely paralyzed under a great weight. His bed shook. Mentally he resisted them and told them to get out. They stayed, and at the end of the night, they communicated telepathically to him, "From you to three generations..." The reptilians disappeared.

The next day, Kiris was met outside his home by the mysterious stranger, who told him he had lost his chance.

From then on, Kiris's family members and descendants began having psychic experiences, including contact with the dead, visitations by beings and spirits, and a projection of a doppelganger that shape-shifted into a black dog and vanished. They also were abducted many times, although back then, no one associated abductions with ETs and UFOs. Yurdozu's mother has been abducted, returning once with white spots on her arm, as though pigment had been removed. Yurdozu has psychic ability and is able to perceive the presence of invisible beings and spirits.

Yurdozu said that of Kiris's five children, only two were able to have children; Yurdozu noted that childlessness occurs to many abductees, which may be due to alien medical procedures.

Such experiences in the Middle East are usually attributed to evil Djinn, not to ETs. Same experiences as elsewhere, just different explanations.

Reptilian-human hybrids

If serpent gods were part of the creation of earth and the heavens, then hybrids have always been among us. Hybridization is still going on, but perhaps the motives have changed. Rather than bring humans into existence, those in control of the programs may be trying to weed us out for their own gain.

As we saw in previous chapters, abductees who say they are part of a breeding program have had encounters with reptilian beings who are part of that program. It is possible that more than one race of beings are participating in harvesting human sexual, genetic and foetal material.

"I believe there is a hybridization project ongoing with all nonhuman cultures that are interacting with us," said Rhodes. He said that some of the abductees are receiving advanced instruction, and have described kiva-like chambers in which they are wearing robes with sashes and are seated along benches ringing the circular room, which an entity in the center provides teaching. Rhodes believes this is part of a preparation for an evolutionary leap of consciousness in humanity, which will be akin to the changes that occurred in the 14th century when the great plagues swept out of Asia.

Reptilians and the Illuminati

Do hostile reptilians rule the planet now? David Icke, the leading conspiracy theorist, has long maintained that everything on Earth, including politics, finances, the media, education, religion, and health and welfare, is controlled by the ruling elite, the Illuminati. At the top of the chain of command are reptilians. They shape-shift into human form, but sometimes their true form can be glimpsed.

According to Icke, the reptilians arrived on Earth thousands of years ago, and mated with humans. Possessed with superior skills and knowledge, the reptilians were able to establish rulership that they have expanded throughout the ages. They have maintained their bloodline, and they manipulate humans, placing the ones they want in key positions of power.⁴

The Sumerians sometimes depicted the Anunnaki in reptilian form. According to Icke, the Anunnaki came to Earth to look for monoatomic gold, a form of gold associated in alchemy with longevity and eternal youth. They ingested it, which turned them into super beings, enabling them to process huge amounts of information, increase the speed of their trans dimensional travel, and shape-shift from reptilian to human form. They did not improve human genetics, but made humans more inferior, and easy to manipulate. They vampirized human life force energy generated by fear, guilt and aggression, which they actively encouraged.

This control goes on today through the inciting of conflict, wars, crime and other detrimental activities, as well as via the power structures of society.

That's a modus operandi that certain hostile Djinn would appreciate - and use to their own advantage. The Djinn, with their power to manipulate thought, could be influencing many international affairs.

Chapter 11

The Battle for Humanity

"The Djinn are coming through portals now in ones and twos to harass human beings, but the time will come when they will pour through in the thousands and we are all going to have a problem."

THAT OMINOUS MESSAGE comes from a researcher in England who has had extensive experience with the Djinn. Michael Hallowell, an investigator and author, is not alone in those views. Other researchers from around the globe with whom both he and I have discussed the Djinn have expressed similar thoughts.

Hallowell, who lives northeast of London, is a former Methodist who converted to Islam. He was drawn into Djinn research in much the same way that I was – by dealing with extreme hauntings in which the problematic entity eluded identification and exorcism.

We had a lengthy phone conversation one day. Every time we hit key topics such as the ET abduction phenomenon, the disguises they use, and remedies for Djinn problems, a high-pitched screeching sound would start up, interfering in the conversation. There also was a constant clicking sound in the background. (Remember, the Djinn sometimes communicate by clicks. The clicking sound has plagued other phone conversations I have had with researchers about Djinn).

In 2006, before his conversion, Hallowell worked on a severe poltergeist case in Essex that all persons involved thought was a brag or bogle, a malicious hobgoblin type of being who is usually big and black when it can be seen. Hallowell's head was turned around after a conversation with a Muslim who, without setting foot on the afflicted premises, accurately described the entity, its behavior and other conditions of the case. The Muslim sent Hallowell to the Qur'an for answers, and he found them in the chapter on the Djinn. "The brag or bogle - those are just English names for the Djinn," he told me. "Poltergeists are Djinn as well." I agreed, having come to the same conclusions myself.

Hallowell's Djinn cases have increased since then, and many of them are accompanied by UFO activity. "There are links between all of these phenomena," he said. "I get the feeling that all of these things come from the same source, which may be another dimension somewhere. Maybe all of the things we see come from one place."

The Djinn encountered by Hallowell are similar to the ones I have encountered in my cases in the United States. They are tough, hostile and intimidating. "They are very difficult to get rid of." Hallowell said. "If you show fear and don't stand your ground, if you blink first before they do, if you show any sort of fear, they will eat you alive. They have no respect, they show no compassion, for anyone who's frightened of the Djinn. Fear just makes it worse. In fact, I think they get some sadistic pleasure out of frightening people. The more you show fear, the more it entices them."

Both of us have seen Djinn put on a show to fool people. "I worked on a case where the Djinn was violent and threatened to kill everyone including the investigators," Hallowell said, "A priest came out to do an exorcism. The Djinn retreated to the garage, then later went back into the house. It made a complete mockery out of everything and it was all a waste of time.

But the priest went away convinced he had gotten rid of it, and the woman of the house was convinced. The Djinn are happy to go through charades to reinforce wrong ideas and misperceptions. The more uncertain you are and the more we have different ideas about what's going on, the harder it's going to be to face the Djinn when they start coming through portals en masse."

Hallowell believes Djinn are part of the ET abduction phenomenon. "The genetic

manipulation in abductions is part of their plot to take back this earth," he said. "I'm not sure they will be successful, but there is going to be a lot of heat and dust, and a lot of blood in the interim. I think there is going to be a war."

Unseen warfare

The war has already started, but it is being conducted by masquerade and at levels that do not raise sufficient alarms in the greater population. Abductions, possessions and other entity encounters are treated as fringe events that happen to peculiar people. That perception is part of the strategy.

The scuttlers

Miles Johnston encountered one nearly invisible battleground in an unexpected place: radio transmission towers, infested with black shadow beings that resembled spiders or crabs. The shadow crabs emerged as part of a dark underbelly of entanglements in UFO activity and abductions, conspiracies, and the bitter violence in Northern Ireland that centered on British dominion versus reunification with the Republic of Ireland.

Johnston was a founder of the former Irish UFO Research Centre in Belfast in the 1970s at a time when Ireland was experiencing a major wave of UFO activity. His UFO and related research led to his contact with pirate radio stations in Dublin that were attempting to stimulate a change to higher consciousness to end the conflicts in Northern Ireland and to heal a centuries-old rift in Ireland itself. The rift, Johnston told me, was created by the Illuminati, or Velon, during the Battle of the Boyne, fought on July 1, 1690 near Drogheda, Ireland. The battle was fought between the Catholic James II and the Protestant Prince William III (William of Orange) for control of the thrones of England, Scotland and Ireland. William prevailed. In actuality, Johnston said, the battle was a ceremonial act, a "matrix program ming by the Illuminati to create a bipolar thought construct to insure the Irish would not wake up and find out their secret past. The pirate radio stations were part of an effort to 'crack the matrix.'"

In the late 1970s, Johnston was part of a small pirate radio crew that joined the team at Big D Radio in Dublin. The members all were "Bounce Backs." people

who had clinically died and been revived. Johnston engineered many pirate radio stations across Ireland, for which he was featured in *Hooleygan: Music Mayhem Good Vibrations* by Terri Hooley & Richard Sullivan. (Hooley is a Belfast cultural icon and the Godfather of Punk." His book is the basis for the film *Good Vibrations*), Johnston also was invited by a faction of the IRA to initiate a peace process with the British government.

In 1987 Johnston's crew established the pirate station KISS FM 103.7, and subsequently he lost his regular job at BBC Belfast. The pirate radio team expanded and united with staff from the offshore pirate radio ship, Radio Caroline, created in Ireland, which was credited with changing the face of music broadcasting in the British Isles.

The KISS facility was located on the border between the Republic of Ireland and Northern Ireland, on the Republic side. It sat on an earth energy grid line on top of a 900-foot hill christened Alien Mountain, near an ancient healing and mystical site called St. Patrick's Chair and Well. Nearby was Castle Leslie, the home of author Desmond Leslie.

KISS, like Caroline and the Dublin pirates, broadcast intention-infused hot-hits music at high power – 500,000 watts — across the border. There was no talk, no propaganda, just music that had been recorded on VHS tape, and then put on computer servers. The disc jockey would infuse the transmission with "loving awareness intention" while it played over the airwaves. The process was called "intelligence transfer sequence or ITS. The pirate stations were spied upon, said Johnston, by government and broadcasting agencies,

In 1995, KISS was reincarnated as Energy 106, broadcasting at 106.6 (a reference to the Battle of Normandy in 1066), with intention-infused high energy dance and trance music.

Mystery lights and abductions

The area around St. Patrick's Chair and Well has a long tradition of mysterious phenomena and entity encounters. The landscape rolls with large drumlin hills.

Loch More straddles the border, with no visible water running in or out; water drains through the rocks further south at the Chair and Well. Johnston and the others often saw brilliant balls of light flying around, and even videotaped a brilliant sphere of light during a taping with RTE, Ireland's national television and radio broadcaster. One day a massive "space plane flew overhead, perhaps a secret (but human) craft looking like a "man-made space shuttle on Big Macs." Johnston said.

KISS was in operation only for a few months when the station manager, Lawrence John, was abducted. He found himself walking across a babbling brook with his dog, and entering another dimensional reality where he met small beings who were about three to four feet tall. They wore cloaks. He saw other humans. There was no space ship and no medical exam as in many reported ET abductions. The station manager was abducted four times during the operation of the station. He never spoke about them until after KISS was shut down in 1995.

Meanwhile, Johnston had his own eerie experiences. He took a job in London as a broadcast engineer, and made trips to Ireland to look after the pirate station. Periodically the transmitter would have problems, and he would have to fly over to fix them. They were no ordinary mechanical problems.

The transmitter was inside a steel box about 6.5 feet tall. Johnston would have to get a step ladder to take off the internal plate to access the innards. He opened the transmitter and got a shock. "For a brief few seconds, I saw black shadow spider or crab-type beings inside, which moved out of the way in a slow scuttling fashion and then disappear," he told me "There were about half a dozen of them, the size of crabs. They didn't look good. I didn't know what the hell they were."

One of the favored forms of Djinn are black spiders.

Johnston soon found that whenever the transmitter had problems and he opened it up, the black shadow creatures were there. They seemed to be in a medium of black fluidic oil that was not physical. The creatures always reacted the same, scuttling away and then vanishing. "I didn't know if they disappeared because they were exposed to light or to human cognitive perception," he said.

"But very important was the fact that on the act of perceiving them, they evaporated. Some years later we got a name for them, and started calling them the scuttlers."

Cracking the matrix

More of the puzzle of the scuttlers unfolded. As the work at the station progressed, the staff noticed that reality changed. "In 1988 with KISS-FM, we felt we cracked the matrix, and there was an artificial reality being imposed by some kind of ET contact," said Johnston. "It was a fluidic reality. Local space-time would become dynamic and dimensions would change. The shadow beings were part of a distortion of the matrix we were in. Some thing was causing a disruption, as though some other force was acting to change what we were transmitting." My co-engineer, George, was most aware of this, including the time distort element not far from the nearby famous Castle Leslie.

The shadow entities were trying to sabotage the radio transmissions. They were always present when a breakdown occurred. Johnston engaged a remote viewer, who was in British Intelligence, and another from a European country's "psi-corp." They told him the creatures infest a lot of power station transmitters, and use the electricity to propagate their life forms. The transmitters at the pirate stations had all come second-hand from another broadcaster, so it appeared they arrived already infested. Johnston found he could clear out the black fluid oil substance with mental energy, by pushing it out with thought and light.

Johnston found the creatures were in broadcasting equipment in Eng and, too, but were below the conscious radar of most people. Employees at one facility reported frequently feeling drained and angry. They would suffer left ear and other effects. Humanoid and other black shadows flitted around. Within his heightened sensitivity, Johnston could perceive dark fields of energy that felt to walk through. There were dark forms that moved like huge anemones with long, snaking tendrils; once he saw a dark scuttler that had "legs" extending 10-12 feet. Dark red spheres the size of soccer balls appeared. In another facility, witnesses had seen a dark form moving about; they called it "the frog." A senior engineer told me about it and tried to electrocute it, but that only made the entity

bigger and stronger.

Johnston became convinced that all of this dark energy was doing more than interfering with equipment - it was affecting the quality of broadcast content itself.

Vampire parasites

There were physical effects as well. The creatures had the ability to attach to humans by going up their backs and entering their bodies behind the left ear. Affected people experienced hearing difficulty in that ear, and also spinal problems at certain vertebrae, C5 and C4. In fact, 18 years ago Johnston discovered he had acquired one of these parasitic creatures himself. "A witness told me, "You have a crab on your back," he said. "I don't know if I've gotten rid of it. I've had my own energy drained by the giant scuttler. Even talking about it, applying conscious thought to it, makes it stronger. So you have the dynamic of, do you talk about it and let people know, thereby propagating its own presence, or do you remain silent? We don't have a simple solution here, but we've got to rise up above this and deal with it. To have this stuff in the broadcast, electricity and computer networks is a serious threat.

Johnston's comment that giving attention to the shadow beings made them stronger and more prolific is exactly the same that I have heard from many Shadow People victims. Once a person becomes aware of them, they latch on to thoughts. Many victims told me they cannot shake the creepy feeling that the links are permanent, no matter where they go or how much time elapses between experiences. "It's like 'It' knows how to get you," one man told me. A woman said, "I can't explain it, but I feel that 'It' is always out there, and it knows where I am. It will come back if I think about it or talk about it."

The same effect is found in demon and Djinn cases as well. When you engage with them on a certain level, talking about them draws them in and empowers them - which is why exorcists and practitioners usually do not discuss the true nature of their work, especially with family. I especially found this effect in Djinn haunting cases that I took on. Whenever attention was focused through interviewing and investigation, someone was sure to pay a price for it.

My Taoist instructor in demonology described it the best. There are dark entities

who are on low levels. They are opportunists, taking advantage of whatever comes across their paths. They make a hit and move on. There are others, much higher up in the hierarchies, much smarter. They have a plan concerning how they are going to engage with humans. These are the entities who "look back." If you notice them and focus on them, they look back at you. And once they see you noticing them, you are forever on their radar. They always know where they can find you. They track you by your thoughts. They may not bother you for years, but when it suits their purpose – they return.

The Djinn are the kind of entity who looks back.

Human collusion

Conspiracy theorists have long maintained that human beings cooperate with entities for their own gain, and that the ruling political and financial elite, the military, and other power structures in society have been co-opted. These theories circulate in the ET abduction field, especially in the MILAB cases; in the reptoid infiltration of the Illuminati; in biological engineering and mind control programs such as MKUltra; and in the magical manipulation of Djinn and other entities to serve political purposes. The argument is made that what we see" is manufactured to maintain our ignorance, not only by the entities, but also with the help of human collaborators.

"The Djinn that must be responsible for this ET phenomenon must definitely have human handlers," said Mahmoud. I believe UFOs are modeled specifically for the western world, because the public are more receptive to the idea and notion of this superior race of beings coming from outer space and coming to save the world. If you look at mainstream media and the science programs, you can see a common theme here. I believe this is part of the program by people at high levels to get us into that mind frame. By so doing the population does not realize that it opens itself up to these abductions."

Johnston said he learned that the scuttlers, the black spider-crab forms, were actually human-made out of an ET-derived biological organism, a type of programmable nanotechnology that works interdimensionally. Like vampires, they suck energy from machines, animals and people. Octopoidal, tentacled black forms have been reported in the Rendlesham Forest in Suffolk, in the

vicinity of the site of a reported landed alien craft in 1980. The incident occurred between the Royal Air Force base at Bentwaters and the United States Air Force Base at Woodbridge (both are now closed).

Perhaps *The Matrix* trilogy, with its black squid-like entities, manufactured reality, placated humans, and replicating Men-in-Black enforcers, hits uncomfortably close to the truth.

The need for discernment

I stress that I by no means deny or dismiss that we are interacting with helpful and benevolent beings as well. Our situation is not all black or white. Strangely, when it comes to entities, humans have a tendency to pigeonhole them as either all good or all malevolent. We would take great exception to other beings characterizing us that way.

Some contactees say they deal with emissaries of light who wish to bring positive, healing forces to the planet. These beings profess to have our best interests in mind: they are concerned about our pollution of the planet, our dwindling resources, our spiritual state of affairs. They have traveled great distances, either across space or through dimensions, for the purpose of giving us a cosmic helping hand.

I have no doubt that those forces are in play, too, but that does not mean we should ignore the darker side. It is tantamount to ignoring human terrorists because most humans are good.

I am reminded of the *Twilight Zone* episode in which a race of giant ETS arrives and eradicates disease, produces abundant food, and establishes free energy. They invite humans to come and visit them on their world. It turns out that their handbook, *How to Serve Man*, is a cookbook. Once again, visionary fiction might strike uncomfortably close to truth, at least in terms of disguised motives.

Even some of the helpful entities warn that a dark and hidden agenda is going on and we are blind to it.

In his books *Dimensions: A Casebook of Alien Contact* (1988) and *Confrontations: A Scientist's Search for Extraterrestrials Contact* (1990), Jacques Vallee disputes the extraterrestrial theory of space travelers. The "medical exams" in abductions are senseless, and some are little more than

"sadistical sexual manipulation" characteristic of medieval accounts of sexual assaults by demons. The whole ET scenario does not hold together. There is no "communion" or "trans formation," but instead "confrontation." The UFO believers wish to cling to their narrow views of space-jaunting aliens here for exploration or a helping hand. A more careful examination of the evidence is quite disturbing, and reveals an advanced technology with hostile potential. We must bring discernment into the picture.

Djinn or more than Djinn?

Clearly, we have a wide range of scenarios and explanations for the hostile agendas of otherworldly beings. Presently it is impossible to reckon how many discrete types and races of entities are engaged in activities on this planet. Ufology researchers list dozens, just within the "ET" arena. I do believe the Djinn are participants in every aspect of paranormal and supernatural experiences we have, from hauntings to mysterious creatures to aliens to interdimensional beings and more.

Their involvements are diverse. If we assume there are other players besides the Djinn, then there are mixed motives and activities. The Djinn may cooperate with some, spy on others, and work against others.

Regardless of whether we are dealing with one race of beings or many, the bottom line throughout history has been the same manipulation, control, and attempts to diminish or eliminate us

New terminology - but still the Djinn

To make any headway in this one of the things we must do is get past the term "extraterrestrial." We have been sold on little grays in space ships, and as long as we limit our beliefs to that, the real entities will go on with their programs unbothered. "The term extraterrestrial is a deliberate misnomer," said Johnston. "It keeps us in a three-dimensional space and time. That is bullshit. These things are extra-dimensional."

Other terms have been put forward over the years, such as EBE for extra

biological entity, and ultraterrestrials, a term coined by John A. Keel to describe the inter-dimensional nature of entities. None of them have caught hold. "ET" is ingrained in the media and the mass consciousness. Even if we acknowledge that most of these interveners and visitors come from other dimensions, we still use the term "ET."

As noted in earlier chapters, our perceptions of beings change according to our beliefs. In all likelihood, we have been interacting primarily with the same entities for millennia, with others coming and going. The entities who appear in all the threads through history are the Djinn.

At some point the Djinn will not have to disguise themselves, but by then it might be too late for human beings. Undermined from within, like a house devoured by termites, humanity might collapse.

"The Djinn's agenda is the removal of humanity from this reality," said Johnston. "To them, we are the aliens in this world. We have to wake up and switch back on."

Chapter 12

Interdimensional

Martial Arts

HOW DO WE "SWITCH back on" and fight back, regain and hold our ground? We must develop effective ways of repelling and protecting - a whole new "interdimensional martial arts," as it were. As the ET abduction phenomenon unfolded several decades ago, both experiencers and researchers explored ways to ward off abduction attacks. Abductees often spontaneously hit on effective remedies - the same ones, in fact, that victims of paranormal assaults use. Researchers confidently said that whole abduction phenomenon could be licked if abductees had the presence of mind to employ certain tactics.

The problem is, no tactic works for everyone. There still are no easy answers, no universal fixes, no one-size-fits-all remedies.

As I discovered in my Djinn cases, the Djinn are extremely hard to banish. They can be sent away for periods of time, but if they are determined, they return, sometimes in another guise. With their long life spans, what are years to us is a momentary interruption to them. The efficacy of remedies is erratic and unpredictable. What works for one person will not work for another, and even a remedy that works for a person may stop working at some point.

The Djinn are very tough to remove and there are no quick fixes with them," said Mahmoud. "It takes time, a lot of time. Holy men and even some *sahirin* fear them because the Djinn go after the person trying to get rid of them. They are notorious and will attempt to grievously injure or kill the exorcist. They follow you home."

I have witnessed immediate and severe backlashes against individuals attempting to clear Djinn, in the forms of serious accidents and the onset of severe illnesses,

Sometimes an exorcist will have to resort to using a powerful Djinn to get rid of a weaker one. That, however, incurs a debt with the powerful Djinn, and the cycle of Djinn interference is perpetuated.

Since the Djinn work on a variety of fronts, from paranormal engagements to possessions to abductions, a wide range of solutions should be considered. Some of the solutions are couched within religious frameworks. I wish to emphasize that no religion provides the ultimate solution, however, and to effectively deal with the Djinn we have to get beyond religious biases.

There are quite a few things that individuals can do to shore up their own

defenses.

Acknowledgment

First we must acknowledge that the problem exists: entity interference is real, not the product of imagination, and not something that happens to "somebody else." It is not limited to personal scope. The interference has ramifications for the entire human race. No one can afford to say, "It's not my problem."

Self-reliance

Individuals are often left to their own devices to learn how to act on their own, and to experiment until they find what works for them. Doing it yourself does not mean being alone and isolated. Draw upon support and advice from family, friends, therapists, professional researchers, support groups, healers, psychics, clerics, and magical practitioners.

Identification of sources

Before solutions can be devised, you must know what you are dealing with. In cases of sudden onset of paranormal phenomena, the reasons must be identified. Paranormal activity does not start up without a reason. I cannot stress this enough. I receive inquiries every day from people who want instant remedies to vaguely described phenomena that they claim came on suddenly.

In the cases of entity abductions, we must sometimes speculate why certain individuals have been targeted, but there are patterns, nonetheless, and hypnotic regression sessions may be necessary to unravel the threads.

Many people who have profound and repeated entity experiences have a life-long pattern, starting from early childhood. They have an inborn openness or sensitivity to the unseen. Researchers have identified what they call "encounter prone," "abduction prone" or "fantasy prone personalities. (My objection to the

latter term is that it implies a person makes up the experience.) Various reasons have been cited to account for these personality profiles, including heightened ability to dissociate, loner tendencies, trauma in childhood, creative ability, interests in the occult, paranormal and metaphysical fields, and so on. Frequent experiencers do not necessarily have all of these traits. In addition, there is a genetic factor in many cases: the experiencer has other family members, even going back generations, who share the same or similar experiences.

Such individuals must address their overall boundaries, and some of the techniques mentioned below are useful.

Attention must be paid to all phenomena. ET abduction researchers must take into account Shadow People, paranormal phenomena, and histories of "haunted landscapes."

Sovereignty

Sovereignty is freedom from external control. Our personal sovereignty comes from a strong sense of self and our right to self-determination. Ann Druffel interviewed abductees about what worked for them, and put together a handbook, *How to Defend Yourself Against Alien Abduction* (1998). For many of them, it involved the attitude, "Hey, you do not have the right to do this to me!" Druffel said:

Some mechanism from an unknown source is profoundly affecting large numbers of our population. The human race, by reasons of its very nature, has its own integrity, which includes the right to be free of unwanted intervention by creatures of unknown motives... Each human being should have the right to choose whether or not they will interact with alien" beings, and to know fully what interaction might mean to them.

No counter-tactic against interfering entities interfering entities will work without strong boundaries. We must shore up our sense of sovereignty, our right to

determine our density without unwanted interference.

Personal boundaries

If we are weak in health, spiritually and physically, our natural energy boundaries are weak, too, making us more vulnerable to manipulation. *This is why awareness of the universal life force is so important.* It forms a protective aura shield around a person. It nourishes our physical, mental, emotional and spiritual health and strength.

In my work with paranormal researchers, I am frequently asked for advice on how to be a better investigator and how to improve protection against negative entities. I always recommend the establishment of a daily practice of meditation. Find your source of spiritual strength, whatever it is, and connect to it. Meditation draws in the universal life force. It is the metaphysical equivalent of working out in a gym.

Take care of your physical, mental and emotional health as well. I have found emotional turmoil to be a factor in many cases. Negative entities are energized by fear and upset.

Develop a strong sense of your own boundaries and your self-confidence. Strong people are better able to resist unwanted encounters.

Will power

Aligned with sovereignty is the use of will power. Many victims in all types of cases have found that they can use their own will power to stop or repel interference.

According to Druffel, Emily Cronin, one of the Tujunga Canyon experiencers, had encounters with bedroom visitors beginning in 1956, following a UFO encounter in California with another Tujunga Canyon experience, Jan Whitley. Shortly afterwards, Cronin began having frequent bedroom invasions that went on for several years. The pattern was this: she would be awakened from sleep by a high-pitched whining sound and the sight of several large-headed beings with slant eyes. She would be paralyzed and unable to look away from the eyes.

Telepathically, they forcefully instructed her to "go with them." She was able to break the connection by thinking back, "No," and engaging in a mental struggle. The whine would stop and the entities would disappear. As far as she knew, she was never fully abducted. Cronin also discovered that if she was able to move, even a little finger, the paralysis would break and the entities would disappear.

Druffel said, "It is important to stress here that she has a strong sense of herself as a person with rights. She felt at the time of the episodes that she had the right to say 'yes' or 'no' to their demands. It was apparently the confidence that enabled her to say 'no' in spite of the entities' repeated, forceful entreaties to go with them."

The "just say no" tactic may work better for some than others. The abductors use paralysis and a strong hypnotizing force to coerce their victims. Some people are much easier to hypnotize than others, and so may be more prone to suggestion and instructions. Others who have more of a natural resistance to hypnosis might have an easier time breaking the hold.

Whatever you can summon up in the form of mental resistance will be of significant help to you.

Will power combined with anger sends a shock back to the entities. Recall that regarding the Djinn, it is important not to show fear, for as soon as they know you are frightened, you have lost the fight.

I have used angry will power myself. As a consequence of my research, I have from time to time had bedroom and dream invasions from Djinn in Shadow Person form, as well as poltergeist phenomena. Whenever I have become aware of their unwelcome presence, I have told them, "Get out! Leave me alone!" I am quite forceful about it, and I mentally push out my own auric field at the same time. I have done this both mentally and out loud.

I went through a period of repeated dream invasions that would not go away. The pattern was always the same. The dreams were lucid. I would wake up in the lucid dream) realizing that a Shadow Person was in the house, coming up the stairs or hovering at the threshold of the bedroom. Alarmed, I would reach over to turn on the light in anticipation of the light sending it away - but the light would either not go on or be extremely dim. My anxiety would increase, and I would reach to the other side of the bed to turn on the other nightstand lamp,

only to get the same result. My anxiety would shoot up, and I would get out of bed and stumble around in the dark. The dream would end with me in a panic. After I had several of these, I realized what was going on: dream invasion and manipulation for the sake of harassment and making me feel vulnerable. The next time I had the same dream, I changed the pattern. When I turned on the light and it did not work, I said out loud, "Oh, *this* again." The experience immediately lost its power to frighten me. The pattern stopped.

Similarly, I have had occasions where I have awakened to see a Shadow Person in the bedroom. I forcefully order it to leave, and it departs.

A caveat to the use of anger: sometimes it makes the situation worse. I have Djinn/Shadow People cases where victims got angry at their attackers. The reaction was like swatting at a wasp - the entity intensified its assault.

Sound

Emily Cronin, mentioned above, found that making her own sound could break the contact. Druffel cites another abductee case, Lori Briggs, who was abducted but cut the experience short by instinctively making her own interfering sound. Briggs was wrapped in light and taken out of her bedroom by small, large-headed beings. They went through the wall and into what appeared to be a craft, where she was examined. She was asked by the entities to go with them," and had the impression it was for the purpose of breeding. She balked, and began "making her own sound" silently within herself. She was returned to her bed. Briggs described the sound as a tone that she was accustomed to making whenever she wanted to relieve stress or relax.

For both women, the inner sound reverberated through the upper body; Cronin said it could be drawn up through the crown chakra at the top of the head.

Druffel underscored the sovereignty of both sound and will power:

The creatures might have realized that they were dealing with a witness who was "centered" who knew herself as a Person with inviolable rights, and was confident in her

Self. In Lori's case, this attitude and self-confidence prevented her from experiencing lasting trauma and negative emotions, as far as her "abductions" was concerned.

The defensive use of sound is interesting, for the entities often arrive accompanied by buzzing and whining sounds. As I mentioned earlier, I believe these sounds to be part of the transdimensional shifting as a hole opens up on our side. The sounds may also be one of the techniques used by the entities to create paralysis and a mesmerizing effect. Sound is a powerful force and can affect matter. The right vibration of sound, for example, can shatter glass and be physically painful and disabling. A counter sound from a victim, even internally, might disrupt the ability of the entities' sound to compel or immobilize them.

Prayer

Many victims of abduction, possession and paranormal harassment alike, find prayer an effective repellent. Unfortunately some fundamentalists seize on this as evidence that only a certain religion has the power to vanquish the unwanted. Actually, I do not think the specific religion matters. Prayer calls upon powerful spiritual forces that are, and always have been, transcendent of religious dogma. Prayer also summons up one's inner spiritual strength.

In many of my Djinn and Shadow People cases, victims repel the entities by calling upon Jesus, God, the Virgin Mary, various saints, and angels. For Christians, the most effective prayers are the Lord's Prayer and prayers to the archangel St. Michael, who defends against wickedness and evil. The visitations and attacks stop and the entities retreat.

Prayers and religious invocations do not work all the time. I have cases where fervent prayers had no effect, and other cases in which/recitation of certain prayers, such as the Lord's Prayer, worked for awhile and then mysteriously ceased being effective.

From a Muslim perspective, Islamic prayers and recitations from scripture will send Djinn away. The *al-Kursi* is an oft-recited verse from the Qur'an (2:255)

used in exorcisms. However, notes Mahmoud, some of the most powerful Djinn are resistant to scripture. (This applies across religions; I have observed Djinn resisting exorcisms from a variety of faiths and shamanic traditions.)

Sometimes shouting "Bismillah!" (Arabic for "In the name of God") will cause annoying phenomena to stop, or make the Djinn retreat.

Lights and EMF

One of the most widely effective remedies against Shadow People and other bedroom visitors is to turn on lights, or sleep with a light on. Victims have also found that leaving computers, televisions and radios on wards off or diminishes activity, too. TVs and radios are often set to static or white noise. It is possible that the generation of electromagnetic energy via lights and devices interrupts or interferes with the entities' ability to manifest.

Physical responses

In some cases, people are able to physically struggle against entities who attack or seize hold of them. The entities exert a real force - but often a victim's hands go right through them as if they were not solid. Druffel had a case of a Texas woman whose bedroom invasions began with piercing noise followed by the sensation of being grabbed by invisible hands. She was able to bite through them to ward off the attacks. (She had also used the Lord's Prayer on some occasions.)

Clean environment

It is no coincidence that entity issues are often found in unkempt, dirty quarters. Carassing entities, including Djinn like chaosundaliwala, have, of course, dealt with many cases of Djinn interference and ET abductions concerning households that are orderly and neat. However, if you have unwanted encounters and your place is disorderly, clean it up.

Spiritual cleansings

Spiritual cleansings of the environment, such as saging, use of incenses and Candle burning have limited effectiveness. They can clear the spiritual air, but rarely banish anything permanently. In parthern Africa, the *sahirin* burn a pungent type of incense called *sai flora fluxo* to keep the Djinn at bay.

Iron and salt

Tron has a long history of being used as an amulet against unwanted entities. In fairy lare, it is said to weaken them. The Djin are afraid of iron. Iron can be used in the following ways nails of stakes pounded into the earth at the corners of dwelling and at the threshold objects hung over the doorway to bedrooms, over beds, or under beds; objects worn on the body.

Salt also has a long history of being used against spirits; its power is" derived from its purity, according to lore. Salt sprinkled around a house, across a threshold, or around a bed sets up a protective barrier. It is not the most practical remedy, since it can be messy and needs to be replenished often. Salt washes for floors and walls, in which salt is combined with various herbs, can be found in most magical traditions.

Amulets

Objects believed to have religious or magical properties to ward off unwanted entities are frequently employed, with varying degrees of success. Devout abductees might festoon their house with crosses, saint medallions, prayer plaques, crystals and so on, but abductions happen anyway.

Among Middle Eastern amulets to repel Djinn are blue "evil eye" charms and the *tabiz*, a small pendant metal-tube on a chain; inside is a piece of parchment with a verse from Qur'an.

The Seal of Solomon is a magical amulet of protection. It is made in both a six-pointed hexagram and a five-pointed pentagram, with various magical names and inscriptions. According to lore, the hexagram and the real name of God were

etched on the magic ring of King Solomon, which enabled him to command the Djinn.

Earlier, I discussed the case of Eric, who had a *qarinah* attachment. He was able to get relief with the Seal of Solomon. First he slept with a drawing of the seal, and then wore a pendant of it. The bedroom invasions stopped. Eventually he was able to stop wearing the pendant without the attacks resuming; however his involvement in a relationship also seemed to be a factor.

My opinion on amulets is that if they offer relief, one should make use of them. Objects can be infused with intention and power, but the energy must be absorbed by a person to work. The active power is not so much in the amulet itself, but in the inner power it evokes in the user - which is why amulets have no effect for some people. If an amulet enables a person to summon up inner strength, sovereignty and a connection to the divine and high spiritual forces, it can be an aid. If a person feels no energetic connection to an amulet, but expects it to work on its own, it is not likely to be useful.

Too much dependency on amulets can be a problem. If a person is somewhere without them, or forgets to wear one, they feel vulnerable, which in turn weakens the universal life force.

Invisibility

Kim Carlsberg went through years of severe abduction experiences with at least nine different types of entities, including the grays, which she wrote about in her first book *Beyond My Wildest Dreams - Diary of a UFO Abductee* (1995). "They tortured my body, used me as a breeder and ruined my reproductive organs," Carlsberg told me in an interview. "I had relationships with my hybrid children that were good, but I had to save my body. Everything stopped, including my connections to my hybrid children."

She is no longer being abducted. "After publishing my first book, I figured out how to make the abductions stop. I knew how to do it all along, but the experience was so intriguing - even though it was terrible and horrifying that I wanted to know everything I could, and then make it stop. It took me eight years to do that. I learned how to raise my vibration to a point where I became invisible to them."

There are techniques in yoga and martial arts for learning how to become Invisible - not through dematerialization but through slipping below the radar, so to speak. It takes time and discipline to master how to use the universal life force to accomplish this.

Forewarning

Victims of repeated visitations and abductions seldom get caught unaware. They soon see a pattern to their experiences, and to the advance warning signs of onset. They may feel strange in certain ways or notice a shift in the environment. Abductions might be preceded by certain kinds of dreams or Shadow People bedroom invasions. In my Shadow People cases, for example, frequent experiencers also observed connections to weather patterns - especially thunderstorms - and lunar phases. Peak activity falls on the one to two nights *before* and *after* the full moon, and the same at the new moon.

Intuition plays a strong role. People vary in their ability to pay attention to intuition, but everyone can improve their skill with a little effort.

Paying attention to forewarning signs enables a victim to take preemptive defensive action, perhaps one or more of the remedies cited above.

In addition to the above, there are a host of other remedial and exorcism tactics offered via religion, magic, and folklore. Experiment until you find the ones that work best for you.

Closing remarks

In researching this book, I have interviewed and consulted with dozens of persons about their experiences and views, and have consulted more than a hundred books on the Djinn, the abduction phenomenon, and related topics that are presented here. The roots of my research extend back into the 1980s, when I began my fulltime career in the paranormal.

Some of the people I consulted believe we should establish peaceful relations with the Djinn (or other aliens) and work toward a harmonious co existence on Earth. I do believe that we are going to have to come to terms with the fact that

we do not have ultimate eminent domain on this planet, and we cannot push out anything to suit ourselves. How that can work out remains to be seen. As I noted in the beginning and throughout, not all Djinn are hostile to humans - but our entity problems are coming from a hostile faction of them. From any perspective in our long engagements with interfering alien beings, all roads lead back to Djinn. They are either responsible for, or major participants in our problematic encounters. The Djinn have a long history of deception, and so I am reluctant to endorse eager cooperation with any of them.

First, we have to deal with the problems at hand, before they get completely out of control. As long as we are distracted in dozens of directions by myriads of entity forms, we are not going to see our situation accurately. We have to get past religious, racial and cultural biases, skewed entertainment portrayals, and limited vision when it comes to interpreting otherworldly experiences. There are no quick fixes here, no instant solutions. But we can, through knowledge, information and self-reliance, apply our own formidable skills to maintain our rightful place and integrity.

End Notes and Select Sources

Introduction: Hide in Plain Sight

1. Dr. Abu Ameenah Bilal Philips, *The Exorcist Tradition in Islam* (Wales: St. David's College, 2007), 52.
2. Gordon Creighton, "A Brief Account of the True Nature of the 'UFO Entities *Flying Saucer Review* Vol. 29 No. 1 (October 1983).

Chapter 1: The Mysterious Djinn

1. *Ibn Taymeeyah's Essay on the Jinn* (New Delhi: Islamic Books Services, 2002, 2004), 2-4.
2. Robert Lebling, *Legends of the Fire Spirits: Jinn and Genies from Arabia to Zanzibar* (Berkeley: Counterpoint 2010), 29.
3. Charles M. Doughty, *Travels in Arabia Deserta* Vol. 1 (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1888), 177.
4. Doughty, 92. 5. Lebling, 103.

Chapter 3: Djinn Companions and Lovers

1. Barbara Dreiser, *Living with Djinn: Understanding and Dealing with the Invisible in Cairo*. (London: SAQI, 2008), 99.

Chapter 4: The Fairy Connection

- 1 Janet Bord, *Fairies: Real Encounters with Little People* (New York: Carroll & Graf Publishers, 1997), 81-82.
2. Jacques Vallee, *Passport to Magonia: On UFOs, Folklore and Parallel Worlds*. (New York: Contemporary Books, 1993), 41.
3. Cynthia Hind, *UFOs Over Africa* (Madison: Horus House Press, 1997),
4. 4. Peter Rojcewicz, "Between One Eyeblink and the Next: Fairies, UFOS, and Problems of Knowledge," *The Good People*, Peter Narvaez, editor (Lexington: The University Press of Kentucky, 1991, 1997), 486. 5.W.B, Yeats, *Irish Fairy and Folk Tales* (London: Walter Scott,

1893), 11.

6. John A. Keel, *The Complete Guide to Mysterious Beings* (New York: Tor, 1970, 1994, 2002), 218.
7. Edwin Stanley Hartland, *Blows Against The Empire: The ET Hypothesis Comes Under Attack In UFOs, Time Slips, Other Realms and the Science of Fairies* (New York: Global Communications, 2008), 10.
8. Jacques Vallee, *Dimensions: A Casebook of Alien Contact* (Chicago: Contemporary Books, 1988), 283-84.
9. Lady Wilde, *Ancient Legends, Mystic Charms, and Superstitions of Ireland* (Boston: Ticknor & Co., 1887), 1.
10. Umar Sulaiman Al-Ashqar, *The World of Jinn and Devils* (Boulder: Al-Basheer Publications and Translations, 1998), 69.
11. Yeats,
12. W.Y. Evans Wentz, *The Fairy Faith in Celtic Countries* (New York: Carroll Publishing Group, 1990), 109.
13. Rocejwicz, 491.
14. See Travis Walton, *Fire in the Sky: The Walton Experience*, www.travis-walton.com.
15. Bob Pratt, *UFO Danger Zone: Terror and Death in Brazil — Where Next?* (Madison: Horus House Press, 1996), 55-56.
16. Rosemary Ellen Guiley, *The Encyclopedia of Vampires & Werewolves* 2nd ed. (New York: Facts On File, 2011), 274.
17. Rosemary Ellen Guiley, *The Encyclopedia of Demons - Demonology* (New York: Facts On File, 2009), 188.
18. "Search for young man abducted by Jinns," February 2, 2012 <http://www.emirates247.com/news/region/search-for-young-man-abducted-by-djinns-2012-02-02-1.440967>.
19. "Kidnapping demons banished in Malaysia," 2010, <http://www.americanmonsters.com/site/2010/10/kidnapping-demons-banished-in-malaysia/>

Chapter 5: Djinn and ET Abductions

1. Ann Druffel and D. Scott Rogo, *The Tujungar Canyon Contacts* (New York: Anomalist Books, 2008), 19.
2. Drullel and Rogo, 43-44.
3. Budd Hopkins, *Intruders: The Incredible Visitations at Copley Woods* (New York: Random House, 1987), 73-74.

4. Hopkins, 85. 1. Hopkins, 83-84. 6. Hopkins, 175. 7. David M. Jacobs, *Secret Life: Firsthand Accounts of UFO Abductions* (New York: Simon & Schuster, 1992), 226-277. N, David M. Jacobs, *The Threat: Revealing the Secret Alien Agenda* (New York: Hreside, 1998) 45. U Jacobs, *The Threat*, 227.

10. Jacobs, 61.

11. Jacobs, 127.

12. Jacobs, 197.

13. Jacobs, 198.

14. Jacobs, 91.

15. John E. Mack, *Abduction* (New York: Macmillan, 1994), 381.

16. Mack, 281.

17. Mack, 33.

18. Mack, 111.

19. Mack, 146, 245, 350-351.

20. Mack, 295, 303, 317.

21. Mack, 303

22. Mack, 404.

23. Mack, 210,211.

24. Mack, 250.

25. Mack, 62.

26. Mack, 80, 136.

27. Mack, 131,

28. Mack, 162, 169.

29. Mack, 409.

30. Mack, 215-216.

31. Mack, 415; 421-422.

32. Karla Turner, *Into the Fringe: A Study of Alien Abduction* (New York: Berkeley Books, 1992), 18.

33. Turner, 48, 73.

34. Turner, 67.

35. Turner, 133

36. Turner, 86.

37. Karla Turner, *Taken: Inside the Alien-Human Abduction Agenda* (Keltworks, 1994), 25-26.

38. Turner, *Taken*, 36.

Chapter 6: Men in Black

1. Guiley, *The Encyclopedia of Demons - Demonology*, 63-64.

2. Keith Thomas, *Religion and the Decline of Magic*. New York: Charles Scribner's Sons, 1971), 17.

3. Gray Barker, *They Knew Too Much About Flying Saucers* (New York: University Books, 1956), 138.

4. Nick Redfern, *The Real Men in Black* (Pompton Plains: New Page Books, 2011), 235.

Chapter 7: The Watchers and Nephilim

1. St. Augustine, *The City of God* (New York: Modern Library, 1950), XV:23.

2. Katharine Briggs, *The Vanishing People* (New York: Pantheon Books, 1978), 159-160.

3. D.A. McManus, *The Middle Kingdom: The Faerie World of Ireland* (London: Max Parrish, 1959), 62-63.

Chapter 8: Black Death and Black Magic

1. William Bramley, *The Gods of Eden* (San Jose: Dahlin Family Press, 1989, 1990), 204.

2. Bramley, 205.

3. Bramley, 208.

4. Bramley, 208.

5. Bramley, 210.

6. "Sheik Mubarak Gilani," March 13, 2002, http://www.igoumoa.org/sheikh_jilani/60_minutes_2.htm.

7. Sheik Mubark Gilani.

8. Farnaz Fassih, "Rough Spell for Iranian Politics: President's Staff Accused of Sorcery." *The Wall Street Journal*, June 10, 2011, [http://online.wsj.com/article/S01000142405270230365740457635732306985395](http://online.wsj.com/article/S010001424052702303657404576357323069853958.html?mod=djemITP_h#articleTabs%3Darticle)

8.html?mod=djemITP_h#articleTabs%3Darticle.

Chapter 9: God, Anunnaki, Angels and Archons

1. Zecharia Sitchin, excerpts from a speech, <http://www.ufoevidence.org/documents/doc145.htm>.

2. Metahistory website, www.metahistory.org.

3. Metahistory.

4. Hank Wesselman, "An Encounter with a Genie (Djinn) in Egypt," <http://www.sharedwisdom.com/article/encounter-jinn-genie-egypt>.

Chapter 10: Reptilians and Reptoids

1. Kim Carlsberg, *The Art of Close Encounters* (Close Encounters Publishing, 2010), 40.

2. Carlsberg, 42-48.

3. Farah Yurdozu, "The Jinn or ETs? Three Generations of a Turkish Family's Paranormal Experiences," <http://farahpurgatory.blogspot.com/>

4. David Icke website, www.davidicke.org.

Chapter 12: Interdimensional Martial Arts

1. Ann Druffel, "Can we battle these entities?" *Flying Saucer Review* Vol. 33, No.3 (September 1988).

2. Druffel.

3. Druffel.

4. Qur'an, 2:255: In the name of Allah, the Beneficent, the Merciful. Allah! There is no God but He, The Living, the Self-subsisting, the Eternal. No slumber can seize Him, nor sleep. All things in heaven and earth are His. Who could intercede in His presence without His permission? He knows what appears in front of and behind His creatures. Nor can they encompass any knowledge of Him except what he wills. His throne extends over the heavens and the earth, and He feels no fatigue in guarding and preserving them, for He is the Highest and Most Exalted. Allah, the Most High, speaks the truth.

About the Author

Rosemary Ellen Guiley has worked full-time in the paranormal and metaphysical fields since 1983. Her multi-faceted work includes investigating and researching all kinds of entity contact experiences, as well as paths of spiritual development and enlightenment. She has written more than 50 books, including single-volume encyclopedias, on a wide range of subjects, making her one of the most widely known and consulted experts in the field. Guiley keeps a busy schedule of public lecture appearances, media appearances, investigations and writing. She has her own radio show, "Strange Dimensions," and a monthly newsletter by the same title, *Strange Dimensions*. She heads her own publishing company, Visionary Living, Inc., which now produces most of her material.

Guiley has been a frequent guest on *Coast to Coast AM* with host George Noory, and she has been featured on paranormal-themed documentaries and shows on NBC, The Syfy Channel, The History Channel, A&E, The Discovery Channel, The Travel Channel, and independent productions. She is a consulting editor of *FATE* magazine. She lives in Connecticut.

Guiley's main website is www.visionaryliving.com. Her website devoted to the Djinn is www.djinnuniverse.com.

